







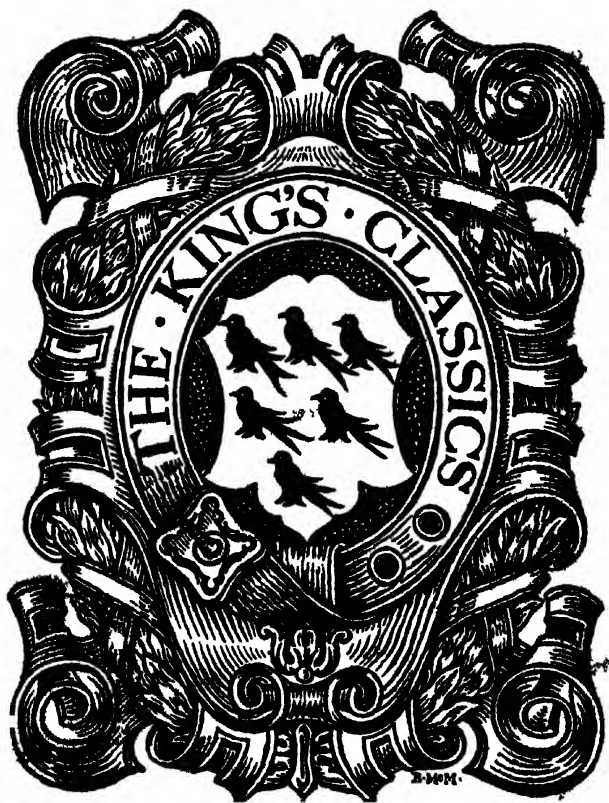






**THE KING'S CLASSICS UNDER  
THE GENERAL EDITORSHIP OF  
ISRAEL GOLLANCZ**







**FITZGERALD'S SIX DRAMAS<sup>2</sup>  
OF CALDERON EDITED  
BY H. OELSNER M.A. PH.D**



SIX DRAMAS OF CALDE-  
RON FREELY TRANS-  
LATED BY EDWARD  
FITZGERALD EDITED  
BY H. OELSNER M.A. Ph.D

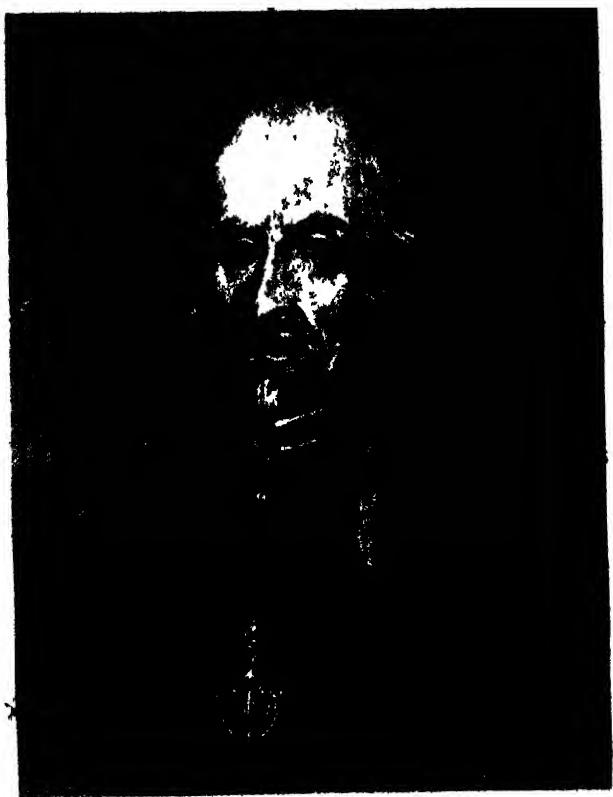
ALEXANDER MORING THE DE  
LA MORE PRESS 298 REGENT  
STREET LONDON W 1903



. BIRD OF TO-DAY, THY SONGS ARE STALE  
TO HIS, MY SINGER OF ALL WEATHERS,  
MY CALDERON, MY NIGHTINGALE,  
MY ARAB SOUL IN SPANISH FEATHERS.

J. R. LOWELL.





**CALDERON DE LA BARCA**





## PREFACE

**The Writer of the Plays, and his Position among Spanish Dramatists.—**

“I suppose Calderon was over-praised some twenty years ago : for the last twenty it has been the fashion to under-praise him, I am sure. His Drama may not be the finest in the world. One sees how often, too, he wrote in the fashion of his time and country : but he is a wonderful fellow : one of the Great Men of the world.” Thus Edward FitzGerald in a letter to his friend, W. B. Donne, bearing the date, August 10, 1852. Many will agree with this estimate, and will regret that, after the lapse of fifty years, it is still, in many quarters, “the fashion to under-praise him.”

In Spain, as in other countries, the drama had its origin in religion, and we still possess the fragments of a medieval mystery play—that of the *Reyes Magos*. Alfonso's laws prove the existence of liturgical dramas performed at the great church festivals. He, and

after him the chroniclers, reprove the gradual introduction into these of buffoonery and secular elements. These elements went to the making of a secular drama, and, towards the end of the 15th century, the *juegos de escarnios* came to be performed in the public square. The *Celestina* of Fernando de Rojas (ca. 1492), an extraordinary dialogue, dealing with the loose morals of the day, half novel, half play, but never intended for the stage, undoubtedly hastened the development of these secular plays.<sup>1</sup> Juan del Encina (ca. 1469–1534), with his short *eglogas*, in which peasants were introduced, Torres Naharro (*Propaladia*, Naples, 1517), who produced his *comedias a noticia* and a *fantasia* at Rome, the Portuguese Gil Vicente (1470–1540), and Lucas Fernández, pave the way for Lope de Rueda (fl. ca. 1540–1566), who was regarded by Cervantes and others as the real father of the Spanish drama. He excelled in the *pase* or *estremes*, a fascinating little type of play, dealing with some scene of contem-

<sup>1</sup> The modern tendency to depict the lower *strata* of society, so interesting to the student of realism in literature and art, may be said to have received its first full development in Spain—with the *Celestina*, the *picaresque* novels, the *entremeses*, and paintings such as the street-scenes and beggar-boys of Velázquez and Murillo. The phenomenon is clearly to be explained as a reaction against the excessive cult of religion and courtly elegance.

porary manners. In the second half of the 16th century, Juan de la Cueva, Cervantes (whose *entremeses* are little masterpieces), Bermúdez, de Virués, and Argensola, greatly widened the scope of the drama, adding among other themes those taken from the national history. By the time the 17th century is reached, the dramas have come to be divided into three acts (*jornadas*), while the metre employed for the greater part of each play is that of the national ballads—*redondillas* of seven or eight syllables, forming assonance or rhyming *abba*, or, more rarely, *abba acca*.<sup>1</sup> Plays dealing with religious subjects are sharply divided into the *comedias divinas*, played on the regular stage; and the *autos*, or liturgical plays,<sup>2</sup> the direct descendants of the medieval drama, reserved for the festivals of the Church—the *autos al nacimiento* for Christmas, and the *autos sacramentales* for Corpus Christi.<sup>3</sup> The secular

<sup>1</sup> Readers of the plays in this volume must bear in mind that the originals contain no prose whatever.

<sup>2</sup> This distinction is often missed. Even so earnest a student as Longfellow thought that Calderón's *Devoción de la Cruz* was an *auto* (see *The Devotional Poetry of Spain*).

<sup>3</sup> While so many countries derive their drama from religious ceremonies, it was reserved for Spain, ever loyal to her Catholic traditions, to go on perfecting these ceremonial religious plays till the end of the 17th century.



drama consisted (besides the short *entremeses*, *pasos*, *saynetes*, *bailes*, and *zarzuelas*) of the *comedias*, a title used indifferently for comic and tragic pieces. While the *comedia de capa y espada*, the "cloak and sword play," dealt with contemporary middle-class life, and required no elaborate scenery, the *comedia de teatro*, or *de ruido*, took its heroes and heroines from royal or princely houses, and was staged with proportionate splendour. Except for the Valencian playwrights, headed by Guillén de Castro (1569-1631), who showed a certain independence, all the poets of the golden age of the Spanish drama must be grouped round the figure of Lope de Vega (1562-1635), Spain's greatest dramatist, and one of the most astounding writers of all time—truly a "prodigy of nature." Leaving aside the consideration of his non-dramatic works (a huge mass of literature in themselves), and of his shorter pieces for the stage, he wrote some 1,500 plays, about a third of which have come down to us; and though he rarely attained perfection of form, save in single scenes, or at most in single acts, yet his work as a whole reaches a high level of artistic excellence. His rapid and admirable powers of invention, the infinite resources of his wit, and his complete mastery over every form of verse, have

probably never been surpassed. He gathered up the threads of his predecessors, seized on all the possibilities they had but dimly conceived, perfected their intrigue, improved their characterisation, drew on the whole stock of themes they had used, besides adding to it largely himself, introduced as a regular character the *gracioso* (or "funny man"), developed the point of honour and other peculiarly Spanish features; in short, he perfected the Spanish National Drama. Lope did for Spain what Shakespeare did for England. Like Shakespeare, too, he had contemporaries of rare excellence, chief among them, Tirso de Molina and Juan Ruiz de Alarcón; but, unlike Shakespeare, he was followed by a writer of plays who was a greater *poet* than himself. As Lope is undoubtedly Spain's greatest playwright, so Calderón is her greatest dramatic *poet*—the greatest of her poets who wrote for the stage.

Pedro Calderón de la Barca was born at Madrid, of noble family, on January 17, 1600. He received his schooling from the Jesuits, and finished his studies at Salamanca. He is said to have written his first play at the age of thirteen, which may or may not be true; but a piece of his was certainly acted at Madrid in 1622. He then spent the greater part of the years

from 1625-1635 soldiering in the Milanese and in Flanders. In 1636 he was called back to the capital by Philip IV., who became his warm admirer, patron, and friend. When Lope died the Spanish people craved for a new idol, and found it in Calderón. Honours were showered on him; he was made a knight of Santiago, and everything was done to retain him at court, but he insisted on taking part in the expedition that was sent to quell the Catalonian rising. In 1649 we find him again at Madrid, whither he had been summoned to arrange the pageant for the entry into the capital of Philip's second queen. This "show" has been immortalised in one of our plays—*Beware of Smooth Water*. Two years later he entered the priesthood, as Lope had done before him; and though he subsequently held several appointments in the Church, this did not prevent him from continuing to write a large number of plays, both religious and secular. When Philip died, in 1665, his successor, Charles II., though but the shadow of a king and of a man, appears to have treated our poet with all due honour. Calderón ended his life on May 25, 1681, while writing an *auto*; so that, in the words of his friend, de Solís, "he died, as they say the swan does, singing." The

Spaniards mourned his loss, and with reason : for the days of their glorious drama were numbered. Calderón had some great contemporaries—Francisco de Rojas and Moreto, but of successors there were none.

Although we do not possess all that Calderón wrote, yet we have 118 of his dramas and 72 of his *autos*.<sup>1</sup> It has often been pointed out that he, no less than Lope, sums up the three great Spanish characteristics of his age—the point of honour, loyalty to the throne, and religious faith. Of the first two our plays are full, the third is unfortunately not represented. And yet no one can be said to know Calderón who has not read some of his *comedias divinas* and *autos*.<sup>2</sup> This latter category he brought to the highest pitch of perfection it was ever to attain ; it is the one *genre* in which he stands without a rival. The best of his *autos* breathe true devotion, and are full of exquisite poetry, while they give evidence of much (though never very deep) thought.

<sup>1</sup> We have a list of these plays (and of some now lost), drawn up by the poet himself, when eighty years old, at the request of the Duque de Veragua. All the biographies are based on the contemporary account that is all too short, written by his friend Vera Tassis (for Part V. of the *Comedias*, 1682).

<sup>2</sup> Some of these pieces are accessible in the versions of Mr. M'Carthy, for a list of which see below, p. xxix.

Much the same criticism applies to the two great symbolical dramas which stand apart—*La Vida es Sueño* and *El Mágico Prodigioso*. Here, too, Calderón shows himself to have been a thinker; not by any means so great a thinker as some critics would have us suppose, but yet the greatest thinker among the Spanish dramatists. The other plays have been classified over and over again, and I refer my readers to these lists.<sup>1</sup> None of them can ever be quite satisfactory, as several of the classes and pieces necessarily overlap. Our volume contains only one of the really "great" plays, the *Alcalde de Zalamea*, but the others (with a single exception, as I think) are all representative of our author's genius. If not a collection of gems, it is all the more characteristic on that account. Beautiful, and often great, poetry will be found in well-nigh all the plays that Calderón wrote—his wonderful imagination rarely failed him. For most of the outward equipment of his craft he is indebted to Lope, whom he never surpasses, but often equals. The construction of his plots is excellent, the characterisation (save in a few notable cases, such as *Crespo*) less distinguished. He is admirable in sustained passages of the loftiest passion; nor is he

<sup>1</sup> See note 1 on the next page.

deficient in the lighter qualities of wit and humour. Finally, Calderón must be credited with a larger number of finished masterpieces than his great rival, the very exuberance of whose genius prevented him from filing any of his longer works.<sup>1</sup>

**Calderón in England till 1853.**<sup>2</sup>—During the poet's lifetime three <sup>3</sup> of his plays appear to have

<sup>1</sup> Besides the books mentioned in the text see Count A. F. von Schack, *Gesch. der dramat. Lit. u. Kunst in Spanien*, Berlin, 1845-1846 (*Nachträge*, 1854); F. W. V. Schmidt, *Die Schauspiele Calderón's dargestellt u. erläutert*, Elberfeld, 1857; E. Günther, *Calderón u. seine Werke*, Freiburg i. B., 1888; Menéndez y Pelayo, *Calderón y su teatro*, Madrid, 1881, and *Calderón, Teatro selecto . . . precidido de un estudio crítico*, Madrid, 1881; *Biografía de D. P. Calderón de la Barca* by Felipe Picatoste y Rodríguez, with valuable *Notas, Ilustraciones y Documentos*, in the *Homenage to Calderón*, Madrid, 1881 (pp. 7-61). The best editions of Calderón's secular plays are those of Keil, 4 vols., Leipsique, 1827-1830, and Hartzenbusch, 4 vols., Madrid, 1848-1850; the latter being the more complete and critical. The *autos* were collected by Apontes in 6 vols., Madrid, 1759-1760.

<sup>2</sup> This subject has been treated by M'Carthy (1853) and Trench (1856). The present sketch will be found to contain a number of new facts. Space permits of my including, as a general rule, only complete translations and books devoted entirely to our poet. For an account of the review and magazine articles, which often give excellent specimens from the plays, the reader is referred to M'Carthy and to Poole's *Index*.

<sup>3</sup> The number would be four if the attribution of *Los Empeños de seis horas* to Calderón were correct. On this play is based Tuke's amusing *Adventures of Five Hours* (1663) which, as Dr.

been adapted for the English stage, all of them the work of George Digby, second Earl of Bristol. Only one is extant<sup>1</sup>—*Elvira*, or *The Worst not always True*, published in 1667, and taken from *No siempre lo Peor es Cierto*. This piece, which is, of course, written in blank verse, appears to have enjoyed considerable popularity, and was several times reprinted; but well-nigh all the charm of the original has disappeared. When the sources of the English Drama have been fully explored, it will, in all probability, be found

Ward points out, was held by Pepys to be the "best for the variety, and the most excellent continuance of the plot to the very end, that ever I saw or think ever shall"; and compared with which *Othello* appeared to him "a mean thing," though he "ever heretofore esteemed [it] a mighty good play." However, the comedy is *not* by Calderón, and though Ticknor should have known this, as it was pointed out by Vera Tassis in 1681, Tuke may be pardoned for his error in the preface to the 3rd ed. of his play (1671): ". . . certainly the plot needs no apology; it was taken out of Don Pedro Calderon, a celebrated Spanish author, the nation of the world who are the happiest in the force and delicacy of their inventions, and recommended to me by his sacred Majesty, as an excellent design . . . I take the boldness to sign my opinion that this is incomparably the best plot that I have met with. . . ."

<sup>1</sup> The existence of the other two may be inferred from the following entry in Downes' *Roscius Anglicanus* (1708), p. 26: "'Tis Better than it Was. Worse and Worse: These two comedies were made out of Spanish by the Earl of Bristol." The originals would seem to be Calderón's *Mejor está que estaba* and *Peor está que estaba*.

that Calderón supplies the ground-work, direct or indirect, for many a play written in this country between the years 1650 and 1800. Even now the researches of Dr. Ward and others enable us to connect with our poet Dryden's *Mock Astrologer* and *An Evening's Love* (through the French of Thomas Corneille); Wycherley's *Gentleman Dancing Master*; Killigrew's *Parson's Wedding* (through D'Ouville's *L'Esprit follet*, which is *La Dama Duende*). Other borrowings from Calderón were detected by Isaac Bickerstaffe in the preface to his *'Tis well it's no Worse*, a comedy in five acts and in prose, published in 1770, "as it is performed at the Theatre Royal in Drury Lane by his Majesty's servants"; the direct source of which, Ronquit's *La Cloison*, is translated from one of Calderón's most delightful pieces.<sup>1</sup> Bickerstaffe's version underwent a

<sup>1</sup> "The original of the Play, now laid before the public, is called *El Escondido y la Tapada*, *The Hidden Man and the Veil'd Woman*; and is counted the master-piece of the most famous among the Spanish Dramatic Poets, Don Pedro Calderon de la Barca; who, through Molière, Corneille, Le Sage, Boissy, &c., has provided Vanbrugh, Centlivre, Cibber, and Steel, with *The Mistake*, *The False Friend*, *The Wonder*, *The Busy Body*, *The Kind Impostor*, *The Lady's Philosophy* and *The Lying Lover*, all English comedies, which have been received upon the stage with the warmest marks of approbation." I leave this mine to be worked by others. For *The Wonder* see FitzGerald's foot-note on p. 286, and my observations at the close of the volume.



further process of adaptation at the hands of J. P. Kemble, who published it in 1789 as "an entertainment of three acts" (again in prose). By a curious coincidence the two volumes of Thomas Holcroft's *Theatrical Recorder* (1805<sup>1</sup> and 1806) contain prose renderings, by his daughter Fanny, of the two plays of Calderón which are lost in the Earl of Bristol's version. Here they are called *Fortune Mends* and *From Bad to Worse*. Lope de Vega's biographer, Lord Holland, followed<sup>2</sup> with free prose translations of *La Dama Duende* ("The Fairy Lady") and *Nadie fie su Secreto* ("Keep your own Secret"), the latter of which was selected by FitzGerald, too, though he was certainly not acquainted with the previous attempt. About this time the influence of the German romantic school and their followers began to make itself felt in England, and the works of the Schlegels, of Bouterwek, of Sismondi were translated (1815-1823).

<sup>1</sup> The volume for 1805 has, besides, an account of Calderón based on Vera Tassis, as also "a beautifully embellished head (by H. Thompson, R.A.)." The source of this portrait is the well-known picture (probably by Cano) from which our frontispiece, too, is derived. The lower part of Thompson's design is occupied by a masked gallant and a lady, evidently intended to represent the cloak and sword play in general.

<sup>2</sup> *Three Comedies translated from the Spanish* (1807). The third play is A. de Solís' *Un bobo hace ciento* ("One fool makes many").

It is now generally agreed that their estimate of Calderón was uncritical in its passionate enthusiasm. Yet their influence made for good, seeing that it is better for a great poet to be thought too much of than not to be thought of at all. An article in the *Quarterly* (April, 1821) and Shelley's superb translation of *Scenes from Calderon*<sup>1</sup> are directly traceable to the impulse from Germany. There can be no doubt that these *Scenes* have done more for the Spaniard's fame in England than all the efforts we have so far considered, and still have to consider, combined. It is equally certain that they merit this distinction. An anonymous translation of Raupach's blank-verse tragedy, *Die Tochter der Luft* (written in 1827), a poor work by a poor poet, based on the two parts of Calderón's *Hija del*

<sup>1</sup> They are, of course, taken from the *Mágico Prodigioso*, which play attracted him because of its "striking similarity" with Goethe's *Faust* (letter of April, 1822). To this similarity, by the way, Calderón's enormous popularity in Germany, to the present day, must be largely attributed. Shelley's references to our poet in his letters are always enthusiastic: "I have been reading Calderon in Spanish — a kind of Shakespeare is this Calderon" (Aug. 1819). "Some of them [Calderón's plays] certainly deserve to be ranked among the grandest and most perfect productions of the human mind. He exceeds all modern dramatists, with the exception of Shakespeare, whom he resembles, however, in the depth and thought and subtlety of imagination of his writings, and in the rare power of interweaving delicate and powerful comic traits with the most tragical

*Aire*, appeared in London in 1831, under the title of *The Daughter of Air: A mystic Tragedy, in Five Acts, after the Idea of P. Calderon*. In the preface the extent of Raupach's indebtedness to Calderón is fully discussed. A thoughtful essay by George Henry Lewes, *The Spanish Drama: Lope de Vega and Calderon* (1846), came just in time to readjust the balance. While allowing Calderón's greatness as a poet he refused him the title of a great thinker; moreover, he took up the cudgels on behalf of Lope, who had been sorely neglected. A complete translation (in blank verse) of the *Mágico* by a certain J. H.<sup>1</sup> appeared in 1848. It has some merit, but lacks fire. In the following year Ticknor, in his great *History of Spanish Literature*, of course devoted considerable space to our poet. The chapters

situations without diminishing their interest. I rate him far above Beaumont and Fletcher" (Sept. 1819). In November of the same year he writes that ". . . some of the ideal dramas of Calderon (with which I have lately, and with inexpressible wonder and delight, become acquainted) are perpetually tempting me to throw over their perfect and glowing forms the grey veil of my own words."

<sup>1</sup> The identity of this translator has not been established. He can hardly be M'Carthy, as the British Museum Catalogue and the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.* assert, seeing that, in the Introduction (p. xxiii.) to his versions published in 1853, M'Carthy speaks somewhat slightly of J. H.'s performance.

in question are admirable in many ways, but are, perhaps, more open to criticism than any other portion of the work.

**The Translator of the Plays.**—In 1850 FitzGerald wrote to F. Tennyson: "I have begun to nibble at Spanish"; and three years later the Six Dramas of Calderon were published. He was then 44 years of age. He was born in Suffolk, and spent most of his life in that county, devoted to books, art and music, to yachting, and to his friends. At King Edward VI.'s school, in Bury St. Edmund's, he had formed close friendships with J. Spedding, W. B. Donne and J. M. Kemble; and while at Trinity College, Cambridge, his circle included Thackeray and Thompson (subsequently Master of the College). The three Tennysons and Carlyle were friends of later date. These and other eminent men, and eminent women, too, delighted in FitzGerald's society; to these and others he addressed letters of great charm, which have, since their appearance (1889-1901), revealed to the great public, who only knew his works, a singularly winning personality. A prose dialogue on youth (*Euphranor*, 1851); a "collection of Wise Saws and Modern

Instances," with a preface on proverbs and aphorisms (*Polonius*, 1852) ; and the *Readings from Crabbe*,<sup>1</sup> with an introduction (1882), are three books of considerable interest. But it is as a translator that FitzGerald will go down to posterity. In addition to the Spanish plays with which we are mainly concerned, he rendered "freely," into exquisite English, the *Downfall and Death of King Œdipus* (a Drama in Two Parts chiefly taken from the *Œdipus Tyrannus* and *Coloneus* of Sophocles), the *Agamemnon* (a Tragedy taken from Æschylus), and several works from the Persian, chief among them the *Rubāiyāt* of Omar Khayyām (1st ed., 1859 ; 4th ed., 1879). This rendering, which constitutes FitzGerald's chief title to immortality, was eulogised by Tennyson as the "golden Eastern lay—


Than which I know no version done  
In English more divinely well ;  
A planet equal to the sun  
Which cast it, that large infidel,  
Your Omar . . . ."

There can be no question that the translations

<sup>1</sup> Crabbe was one of FitzGerald's favourite poets ; and his grandson, the Rev. G. Crabbe, one of his most intimate friends. It was while on a visit to the latter, at Merton Rectory, Norfolk, that FitzGerald died (June 14, 1883).

from Calderón and Omar have permanently enriched English literature; and for both of them English literature is indebted, in the first instance, to Professor Cowell, who opened these new vistas to his friend. Needless to say, the letters contain several generous acknowledgments of this debt.<sup>1</sup>

FitzGerald was making a bold experiment, and, though obviously satisfied with his performance, he did not disguise his anxiety as to the judgment that might be passed on it by others. Writing to Mrs. Cowell before the publication of the plays (on April 4, 1853), he says that his "Translation would be so free as to be rather a dangerous Experiment. But I think you can hardly make Calderon interesting to

<sup>1</sup> See, for example, the one to C. E. Norton (January 18, 1882): "I forget if I told you in my last of my surprising communication with the Spanish Ambassador who sent me the Calderon medal [struck to commemorate the bi-centenary of the poet's death], I doubt not at Mr. Lowell's instance. But I think I must have told you. Cowell came over to me here on Monday: he, to whom a Medal is far more due than to me; always reading and teaching, Calderon at Cambridge now (as he did to me thirty years ago), in spite of all his Sanskrit Duties."—Since these pages were set up lovers of literature have incurred a grave loss in the death of Professor Cowell— mar in whom the best English scholarship was united to the humanity of genuine culture. His article on Calderón, in the *Westminster Review* of January, 1851, was the first adequate appreciation of the poet in this country.

English Readers unless with a large latitude of interpretation." And after the book had appeared, he asked his friends for their verdict, and was greatly relieved when it was favourable.<sup>1</sup> The reviewers, on the other hand, "did not take the trouble to understand his object," as Mr. W. Aldis Wright (Fitzgerald's friend and literary executor) tersely puts it. Writing to G. Crabbe on September 12, 1853, the chagrined translator refers to an unfavourable criti-

<sup>1</sup> "I am very glad you like the plays and am encouraged to hope that other persons who are not biassed by pedantic prejudices or spites might like them too. But I fully expect that (as I told you, I think) the London press, etc., will either sink them, or condemn them on too free a principle : and all the more if they have not read the originals. For these are safe courses to adopt. And all this while I am assuming the plays are well done in their way, which of course I do. On the other hand, they really may not be as well done as I think ; on their own principle : and that would really be a fair ground of condemnation" [Letter to G. Crabbe, July 22, 1853].—"Though I believed the *Cædemon* to be on the whole well done and entertaining, I began to wish to be told it was so by others, for fear I had made a total mistake : which would have been a bore. And the very free and easy translation lies open to such easy condemnation, unless it be successful" [Letter to W. F. Pollock, July 25, 1853].—"Though I of course thought the *Translations* well done (or I should not have printed them), I naturally desired the approval of a competent Judge ; since the best of us may make sad mistakes in the estimation of our own handiwork ; and it is not pleasant to dubb oneself an *Ass* in print" [Letter to George Borrow, Aug. 3, 1853].

cism in the *Leader*, and to "a more determined spit at me" in the *Athenæum* of Sept. 10.<sup>1</sup> He goes on: "I told you how likely this was to be the case: and so am not surprized. One must take these chances if one will play at so doubtful a game. I believe those who read the Book, without troubling themselves whether it is a free Translation or not, like it: but Critics must be supposed to know all, and it is safe to condemn. On the other hand, the Translation may not be good on any ground: and then the Critics are all right."

I do not propose to criticise, where the translator's aim has been so completely achieved; nor to compare a translation with the original, where it was so obviously the translator's wish that no such comparison

<sup>1</sup> "We have not taken the trouble to compare these translations with the originals; holding it quite unnecessary to treat as a serious work a book whose author confesses that he . . . ." [here follow extracts from FitzGerald's "Advertisement"; which "Advertisement," by the way, should be carefully perused by every reader of the plays—see pp. 1 to 3 of the present volume]. This "spit" was made by no less a person than John Rutter Chorley, a Spanish scholar of real distinction, whose knowledge of, and love for, the Spanish Drama, has probably never been surpassed; and who was, for that very reason, unable to sympathise with FitzGerald's aims. These versions were intended for such Englishmen as did *not* happen to be Spanish scholars.



should ever be made. It will be more profitable to quote a further passage from the correspondence, in which FitzGerald gives full expression to his canons of translation<sup>1</sup>: "To come down rather a little from him [Scott], my Calderon, which you speak of—very many beside myself, with as much fair Dramatic spirit, knowledge of good English and English Verse, would do quite as well as you think I do, if they would not hamper themselves with Forms of Verse, and Thought, irreconcilable with English Language and English Ways of Thinking. I am persuaded that, to keep Life in the Work (as Drama must) the Translator (however inferior to his Original) must re-cast that original into his own Likeness, more or less: the less like his original, so much the worse: but still, the live Dog better than the dead Lion; in Drama, I say."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> From a letter to Russell Lowell, dated December 19, 1878.

<sup>2</sup> Admirable articles on FitzGerald were contributed to the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*, to Chambers's *Encycl.*, and to the new *Supplement* of the *Encycl. Brit.*, by Mr. W. Aldis Wright, Prof. Cowell and Mr. Edmund Gosse, respectively. There is a fuller biography by J. Glyde (1900), and a bibliography by Col. Prideaux (1901; for the plays from Calderón, see pp. 6 11 and 23-25). A complete edition of FitzGerald's works, including the several series of letters, is now in course of publication, under the supervision of Mr. Aldis Wright. Our plays, which will, of course, form part of this *édition de luxe*, have, since their

Calderón in England from 1853 till 1902.—The year 1853 was further marked by the *début* as a Calderón translator of the Dublin poet Denis Florence M'Carthy (1817–1882), who devoted the better part of his life to the cult of the Spaniard. Between 1853 and 1873 he published five volumes containing, in all, versions of fourteen of the plays.<sup>1</sup> They are marked by rare scholarship

first appearance in 1853, been once reprinted, with several slight alterations by FitzGerald, in the *Letters and Literary Remains*, which were published, after his death, in 1889 (these, too, edited by Mr. Aldis Wright). The text of the present edition scrupulously follows that of 1853, save in the case of obvious misprints. I desire to thank Mr. Aldis Wright and Messrs. Macmillan for their courtesy in allowing me to quote the foregoing extracts from FitzGerald's correspondence.

<sup>1</sup> In 1853 : *The Constant Prince*, *The Secret in Words*, *The Physician of his own Honour*, *Love after Death*, *The Purgatory of Saint Patrick*, *The Scarf and the Flower*; in 1861 : *Love the greatest Enchantment*, *The Sorceries of Sin* [an *auto*], *The Devotion of the Cross* [these three with the Spanish text]; in 1867 : *Belshazzar's Feast* and *The Divine Philothea* [these *autos* are accompanied by English translations of essays on the *auto* by Lorinser and Pedroso]; in 1870 : *The Two Lovers of Heaven* and *Chrysanthus and Daria*; in 1873 : *The Wonder-Working Magician*, *Life is a Dream* and *The Purgatory of Saint Patrick* [rendered a second time]. M'Carthy's first set of versions called forth two masterly articles on Calderón by Chorley (*Athenæum*, Nov. 19th and 26th, 1853). See, too, an appreciation of M'Carthy's Calderón labours in the *Dublin Review*, new series, 1877, vol. xxix., pp. 94–119.

and sincerity, by much poetical beauty, and by a scrupulous adherence to the letter and metre of the originals. It is undoubtedly this latter quality that has prevented their achieving any considerable measure of popularity—and deservedly so. It always has been, and always will be, a matter of controversy, as to how far translators of classical masterpieces should adhere to their originals in point of form ; but it is safe to assert that the Spanish dramatists will never give enjoyment to foreigners save in versions which disregard the peculiarities of the Spanish dramatic metres. Still, M'Carthy is entitled to the warm admiration of all Calderonians ; and no man more fully deserved the Calderón medal, which was, in 1881, duly awarded to him, as to FitzGerald. During the period of twenty years that cover M'Carthy's activity other champions of our poet were not idle. FitzGerald, who had occupied himself at intervals with *La Vida es Sueño* and *El Mágico Prodigioso*, was encouraged by Prof. Cowell, on his return from India in 1864, to put the finishing touches to his remarkable renderings of these plays (1865).<sup>1</sup> In 1856 Archbishop Trench published a

. <sup>1</sup> *The Mighty Magician and Such Stuff as Dreams are made of.*  
*Freely translated from the Spanish by E. F.—Mr. W. Aldis*

notable essay on Calderón, together with specimens of translations from one of the plays and one of the *autos*.<sup>1</sup> It is scarcely too much praise to say that this paper is worthy to rank with Dean Church's essay on Dante, which had appeared some

Wright says: " . . . the reception it [the volume of 1853] met with at the hands of the reviewers . . . did not encourage him to repeat the experiment. He consequently never issued, except to his personal friends, the translations or adaptations of *La Vida es Sueño* and *El Mágico Prodigioso*. These translations never proposed to be close renderings of the originals. They were rather intended to produce, in one who could not read the language from which they were rendered, something of the same effect as is conveyed by the original to those familiar with it." (From the article on FitzGerald in the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*)

<sup>1</sup> *Life's a Dream: The Great Theatre of the World*. From the Spanish of Calderon. With an Essay on his Life and Genius, by Richard Chenevix Trench. London, 1856. [A second edition, with slight alterations and a different title, appeared in 1880.] The following appreciation by Trench of FitzGerald's efforts is very valuable as criticism, especially when it is borne in mind that his principles of translation were diametrically opposed to those of his forerunner. He says that the *Six Dramas* "are far the most important and worthiest contribution to the knowledge of the Spanish poet which we have yet received. But, written as they are [ed. of 1880: are a very important contribution to the knowledge of the Spanish poet; written as they are] in English of an exquisite purity and vigour, and dealing with poetry in a poet's spirit, they yet suffer as it seems to me, under serious drawbacks . . . [such as the use of blank verse]; but how little likely Calderon is to obtain a more gifted translator, and how much his modest choice of plays on which to exercise his skill, which are not

years previously. Both are written by Churchmen of wide sympathies and culture ; and both aim at popularising a great poet. Dr. Garnett contributed a valuable article on the Spaniard to the ninth edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica* (vol. iv., 1876).<sup>1</sup> Miss Hasell's book on Calderón (1879 ; 2nd ed., 1898) is not of any great merit, and devotes excessive space to the analysis of a comparatively small number of the plays ; however, she deserves credit for dealing in a spirit of enthusiasm and at considerable length with the *autos* and *comedias divinas*. In 1888 Mr. Norman MacColl

among his author's best, is to be regretted, I think the reader will own after a single quotation from this volume"—[here follows a passage which will be found on p. 29 of our edition].

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Garnett, himself a translator of rare gifts, deserves to be heard on the three foremost English translators of Calderon : "Shelley's version of some scenes of the *Wonder-Working Magician* is incomparably the best English interpretation, and no reproduction in our language will ever be perfectly successful that does not proceed upon his principle of intermingling blank verse with irregular lyrical metres. Mr. FitzGerald and Mr. D. F. M'Carthy, two excellent translators, have erred—the former by resorting to blank verse entirely, the latter by discarding it altogether. Mr. FitzGerald's version is too English, and Mr. M'Carthy's too Spanish ; the peculiar delicacy of the assonant rhyme, which he has endeavoured to preserve throughout, is entirely imperceptible in our language. . . . There is perhaps no more congenial field for a writer of a poetical temperament than the translation of Calderon."

published an edition of four<sup>1</sup> of Calderón's masterpieces in the original, with full apparatus in the way of prolegomena and notes; the volume (which is dedicated to Robert Browning) is in all respects worthy of this admirable Spanish scholar. Two distinguished English historians of Spanish literature, Mr. H. Butler Clarke (1893) and Mr. James Fitzmaurice-Kelly (1898), dealt with Calderón in chapters that are well worth study, for both writers are masters of their theme.<sup>2</sup>

It only remains to add that on May 15, 1899, the Elizabethan Stage Society honoured Calderón, FitzGerald and themselves, by producing *Such Stuff as Dreams are made of*. The select public, and the

<sup>1</sup> *El Príncipe Constante, La Vida es Sueño, El Alcalde de Zalamea, and El Escondido y la Tapada*. This is the only critical edition of any of Calderón's plays that has appeared in England. The three plays published by M'Carthy in the original were merely reprinted from a Spanish edition. We may note that a *Teatro Español* was published at "Londres" in 1817-1821, the publishers being "T. Boosey e hijos." Vols. 2 and 3 of this selection, the sale of which in England could not have been large, are devoted to Calderón, ten of his plays being included. The introduction, in Spanish, is signed "A. A."—probably to be identified as Angel Anaya, a Spanish teacher in London, who wrote a few harmless books and pamphlets, including an "Essay on Spanish Literature" (London, 1818).

<sup>2</sup> Though the opinions of Mr. Kelly, incontestably one of the leading Spanish scholars of the day, are entitled to all respect and consideration, yet I have always felt that his section

dramatic critics, too, as a body, were duly appreciative. May this representation<sup>1</sup> be taken as an augury of better things to come? May we yet hope for an actor-manager, who, while not neglecting Shakespeare and the other great representatives of the British Drama, will realise that there is a great foreign Drama, too; that, when it has once been decided to go abroad for novelties, it were well to produce them in a reverent spirit, and better not to touch them at all than stage a travesty, say, of Goethe's *Faust*; that the Continent has produced many plays, which, if not of the calibre of *Faust*, are still great works, written by men of great genius; and that the *Misanthrope*, the *Alcalde de Zalamea* and *Kabale und Liebe*, to name but three of them, are not only great literary plays, but great *acting* plays as well.

February, 1903.

on Calderón, brilliant though it be, is marred by his evident partiality for Lope. This bias reappears in *Lope de Vega and the Spanish Drama*, the Taylorian Lecture for 1902, which, though dated 1902, was not published till the first week of 1903, and, unfortunately, did not reach me till this preface was written and set up. Save in this one particular, which appears to me a flaw, though it will no doubt be regarded by others as a virtue, the essay may be heartily recommended to all students of the Drama.

<sup>1</sup> A revival of the play is promised by the Society for May of the present year.

	PAGE
ADVERTISEMENTS . . . . .	I
I THE PAINTER OF HIS OWN DISHONOUR . . . . .	5
• II KEEP YOUR OWN SECRET . . . . .	107
III GIL PEREZ, THE GALICIAN. . . . .	185
IV THREE JUDGMENTS AT A BLOW . . . . .	255
V THE MAYOR OF ZALAMBA . . . . .	337
VI BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER . . . . .	407
NOTES . . . . .	487





## ADVERTISEMENT

**I**N apologizing for the publication of so free translations of so famous a poet as Calderon, I must plead, first, that I have not meddled with any of his more famous plays ; not one of those on my list being mentioned with any praise, or included in any selection that I know of, except the homely Mayor of Zalamea. Four of these six indeed, as many others in Calderon, may be lookt on as a better kind of what we call melodramas. Such plays as the *Magico Prodigioso* and the *Vida es Sueño* (I cannot rank the *Principe Constante* among them) require another translator, and, I think, form of translation.

Secondly, I do not believe an exact translation of this poet can be very successful ; retaining so much that, whether real or dramatic Spanish passion, is still bombast to English ears, and confounds otherwise

distinct outlines of character ; Conceits that were a fashion of the day ; or idioms that, true and intelligible to one nation, check the current of sympathy in others to which they are unfamiliar ; violations of the probable, nay *possible*, that shock even healthy romantic licence ; repetitions of thoughts and images that Calderon used (and smiled at) as so much stage properties—so much, in short, that is not Calderon's own better self, but concession to private haste or public taste by one who so often relied upon some striking dramatic crisis for success with a not very accurate audience, and who, for whatever reason, was ever averse from any of his dramas being printed.

Choosing therefore such less famous plays as still seemed to me suited to English taste, and to that form of verse in which our dramatic passion prefers to run, I have, while faithfully trying to retain what was fine and efficient, sunk, reduced, altered, and replaced, much that seemed not ; simplified some perplexities, and curtailed or omitted scenes that seemed to mar the breadth of general effect, supplying such omissions by some lines of after-narrative ; and in some measure have tried to compensate for the fulness of sonorous Spanish, which Saxon English at

least must forego, by a compression which has its own charm to Saxon ears.

That this, if proper to be done at all, might be better done by others, I do not doubt. Nay, on looking back over these pages, I see where in some cases the Spanish individuality might better have been retained, and northern idiom spared; and doubtless there are many inaccuracies I am not yet aware of. But if these plays prove interesting to the English reader, I and he may be very sure that, whatever of Spain and Calderon be lost, there must be a good deal retained; and I think he should excuse the licence of my version till some other interests him as well at less expense of fidelity.

I hope my *Graciosos* will not be blamed for occasional anachronisms not uncharacteristic of their vocation.



**THE PAINTER OF HIS OWN  
DISHONOUR**

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FFDERIGO,	<i>Prince of Orsino.</i>
CELIO,	<i>his Friend.</i>
DON LUIS,	<i>Governor of Naples</i>
PORCIA,	<i>his Daughter.</i>
ALVARO,	<i>his Son.</i>
FABIO,	} <i>their Servants.</i>
BELARDO,	
JULIA,	
DON JUAN ROCA.	
SERAFINA,	<i>his Wife.</i>
DON PEDRO,	<i>his Father-in-law.</i>
LFONFLO,	} <i>their Servants.</i>
FLORA,	
MASKERS, MUSICIANS, SAILORS, &c.	

# THE PAINTER OF HIS OWN DISHONOUR

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room in DON LUIS' palace at Naples.—*

*Enter DON LUIS and DON JUAN meeting.*

**L**UIS. Once more, a thousand times once more,  
• Don Juan,  
Come to my heart.

*Juan.* And every fresh embrace

Rivet our ancient friendship faster yet !

*Luis.* Amen to that ! Come, let me look at you—  
Why, you seem well—

*Juan.* So well, so young, so nimble,  
I will not try to say how well, so much  
My words and your conception must fall short  
Of my full satisfaction.

*Luis.* How glad am I  
To have you back in Naples !

*Juan.* Ah, Don Luis,



Happier so much than when I last was here,  
Nay, than I ever thought that I could be.

*Luis.* How so ?

*Juan.* Why, when I came this way before,  
I told you (do you not remember it ?)  
How teased I was by relatives and friends  
To marry—little then disposed to love—  
Marriage perhaps the last thing in my thoughts—  
Liking to spend the spring time of my youth  
In lonely study.

*Luis.* Ay, ay, I remember :  
Nothing but books, books, books—still day and night  
Nothing but books ; or, fairly drowsed by them,  
By way of respite to that melancholy,  
The palette and the pencil—  
In which you got to such a mastery  
As smote the senseless canvas into life.  
O, I remember all—not only, Juan,  
When you were here, but I with you in Spain,  
What fights we had about it !

*Juan.* So it was—  
However, partly wearied, partly moved  
By pity at my friends' anxieties,  
Who press'd upon me what a shame it were  
If such a title and estate as mine

Should lack a lineal inheritor,  
At length I yielded—  
Fanned from the embers of my later years  
A passion which had slept in those of youth,  
And took to wife my cousin Serafina,  
The daughter of Don Pedro Castellano.

*Luis.* I know ; you showed me when you last  
were here

The portrait of your wife that was to be,  
And I congratulated you.

• *Juan.* Well now  
Still more congratulate me—as much more  
As she is fairer than the miniature  
We both enamoured of. At the first glance  
I knew myself no more myself, but hers,  
Another (and how much a happier !) man.

*Luis.* Had I the thousand tongues, and those of  
brass,  
That Homer wished for, they should utter all  
Congratulation. Witty too, I hear,  
As beautiful ?

*Juan.* Yourself shall judge of all,  
For even now my lady comes ; awhile  
To walk the Flora of your shores, and then  
Over your seas float Venus-like away.

*Luis.* Not *that*, till she have graced our gardens long,  
If once we get her here. But is she here?

*Juan.* Close by—she and her father, who would  
needs

See her abroad; and I push'd on before  
To apprise you of our numbers—so much more  
Than when I first proposed to be your guest,  
That I entreat you—

*Luis.* What?

*Juan.* —to let us go,  
And find our inn at once—not over-load  
Your house.

*Luis.* Don Juan, you do me an affront—  
What if all Naples came along with you?—  
My heart—yes, and my house—should welcome them.

*Juan.* I know. But yet—

*Luis.* But yet, no more “but yet”—  
Come to my house, or else my heart shall close  
Its doors upon you.

*Juan.* Nay, I dare not peril  
A friendship—

*Luis.* Why, were't not a great affront  
To such a friendship—when you learn besides,  
I have but held this government till now  
Only to do you such a courtesy.

*Juan.* But how is this ?

*Luis.* Sickness and age on-coming,  
I had determined to retire on what  
Estate I had—no need of other wealth—  
Beside, Alvaro's death—my only son—

*Juan.* Nay, you have so felicitated me,  
I needs must *you*, Don Luis, whose last letter  
Told of a gleam of hope in that dark quarter.

*Luis.* A sickly gleam—you know the ship he  
sail'd in  
'Was by another vessel, just escaped  
The selfsame storm, seen to go down—it seem'd  
With all her souls on board.

*Juan.* But how assured  
'Twas your son's ship ?—

*Luis.* Alas, so many friends  
Were on the watch for him at Barcelona,  
Whither his ship was bound, but never came—  
Beside the very messenger that brought  
The gleam of hope, premised the tragedy—  
A little piece of wreck,  
'That floated to the coast of Spain, and thence  
Sent to my hands, with these words scratcht upon't—  
“*Escaped alive, Alvaro.*”

*Juan.* When was this ?

*Luis.* Oh, months ago, and since no tidings heard,  
In spite of all inquiry. But we will hope.  
Meanwhile, Serafina—when will she be here ?

*Juan.* She must be close to Naples now.

*Luis.* Go then,  
Tell her from me—  
I go not forth to bid her welcome, only  
That I may make that welcome sure at home.

*Juan.* I'll tell her so. But—

*Luis.* What ! another "*But*" ?  
No more of that. Away with you.—Porcia !

[*Exit* ]UAN.

*Enter PORCIA.*

Daughter, you know (I have repeated it  
A thousand times, I think) the obligation  
I owe Don Juan Roca.

*Porcia.* Sir, indeed  
I've often heard you talk of him.

*Luis.* Then listen.  
He and his wife are coming here to-day—  
Directly.

*Por.* Serafina !

*Luis.* Yes.  
To be our guests, till they set sail for Spain ;  
I trust long first—

*Por.* And I. How glad I am !

*Luis.* You ! what should make you glad ?

*Por.* That Serafina,

So long my playmate, shall be now my guest.

*Luis.* Ay ! I forgot—that's well, too—

Let us be rivals in their entertainment.

See that the servants, Porcia, dress their rooms

As speedily and handsomely as may be.

*Por.* What haste can do (which brings its own  
excuse)

I'll do—'tis long a proverb hereabout

That you are Entertainer-general,

Rather than Governor, of Naples.

*Luis.* Ay,

I like to honour all who come this way.

*Enter LEONELO.*

*Leonelo.* Peace to this house !—and not only that, but a tory besides.—A company of soldiers coming to a certain village, a fellow of the place calls out for *two* to be billeted on him. “What !” says a neighbour, “you want a double share of what every one else tries to shirk altogether ?” “Yes,” says he, “for the more nuisance they are while they stay, the more glad one is of their going.” In illustration of which,

and also of my master's orders, I crave your Lordship's hand, and your Ladyship's foot, to kiss.

*Luis.* Welcome, good Leonelo. I was afraid I had overlooked you in receiving your master.

*Por.* And how does marriage agree with you, Leonelo ?

*Leon.* One gentleman asked another to dine : but such an ill-ordered dinner that the capon was cold, and the wine hot. Finding which, the guest dips a leg of the capon into the wine. And when his host asks him what he's about—"Only making the wine heat the capon, and the capon cool the wine," says he. Now just this happened in my marriage. My wife was rather too young, and I rather too old ; so, as it is hoped—

*Por.* Foolery, foolery, always !—tell me how Serafina is—

*Leon.* In a coach.

*Por.* What answer is that ?

*Leon.* A very sufficient one—since a coach includes happiness, pride, and (a modern author says) respectability.

*Por.* How so ?

*Leon.* Why, a certain lady died lately, and for some reason or other, they got leave to carry her to the grave

in a coach. Directly they got her in,—the body, I mean,—it began to fidget—and when they called out to the coachman—“Drive to St. Sepulchre’s!”—“No!” screams she,—“I won’t go there yet. Drive to the Prado first; and when I have had a turn there, they may bury me where they please.”

*Luis.* How can you let your tongue run on so!—

*Leon.* I’ll tell you. A certain man in Barcelona had five or six children: and he gave them each to eat—

• (*Voices within.*) “Way there! way!”

*Por.* They are coming.

*Leon.* And in so doing, take that story out of my mouth.

*Enter JULIA.*

*Julia.* Signor, your guests are just alighting.

*Luis.* Come, Porcia—

*Leon.* (No, no, stop you and listen to me about those dear children.)

*Por.* They are coming upstairs—at the door—

*Enter DON JUAN leading SERAFINA, DON PEDRO,  
and FLORA—all in travelling dress.*

*Luis.* Your hand, fair Serafina, whose bright eyes  
Seem to have drawn his lustre from the sun,



To fill my house withal ;—a poor receptacle  
Of such a visitor.

*Por.* Nay, 'tis for me  
To blush for that, in quality of hostess ;  
Yet, though you come to shame my house-keeping,  
Thrice welcome, Serafina.

*Serafina.* How answer both,  
Being too poor in compliment for either !  
I'll not attempt it.

*Ped.* I am vext, Don Luis,  
My son-in-law should put this burden on you.

*Luis.* Nay, vex not me by saying so.—What  
burden ?  
The having such an honour as to be  
Your servant ?—

*Leon.* Here's a dish of compliments !

*Flora.* Better than you can feed your mistress with.  
(*Guns heard without.*)

*Juan.* What guns are those ?

*Enter FABIO.*

*Fabio.* The citadel, my lord,  
Makes signal of two galleys in full sail  
Coming to port.

*Luis.* More guests ! the more the merrier !

*Ped.* The merrier for them, but scarce for you,  
Don Luis.

*Luis.* Nay, good fortune comes like bad,  
All of a heap. What think you, should it be,  
As I suspect it is, the Prince Orsino  
Returning ; whom, in love and duty bound,  
I shall receive and welcome—

*Juan.* Once again,  
Don Luis, give me leave—

*Luis.* And once again,  
And once for all, I shall *not* give you leave.  
Prithee, no more—  
All will be easily arranged. Porcia,  
You know your guest's apartments—show her thither :  
I'll soon be back with you.

*Ped.* Perinit us, sir,  
To attend you to the port, and wait upon  
His Highness.

*Luis.* I dare not refuse that trouble,  
Seeing what honour in the prince's eyes  
Your company will lend me.

*Leon.* And methinks  
I will go with you too.

*Juan.* What, for that purpose ?

*Leon.* Yes—and because perhaps among the crowd

I shall find some to whom I may relate  
That story of the children and their meat.

[*Exeunt* DON LUIS, PEDRO, JUAN, LEONELO, FABIO, &c.]

Ser. Porcia, are they gone ?

Por. They are.

Ser. Then I may weep.

Por. Tears, Serafina !

Ser. Nay, they would not stay

Longer unshed. I would not if I could  
Hide them from you, Porcia. Why should I,  
Who know too well the fount from which they flow ?

Por. I only know you weep—no more than that.

Ser. Yet 'tis the seeing you again, again  
Unlocks them—is it that you do resent  
The discontinuance of our early love,  
And that you *will* not understand me ?

Por. Nay,—

What can I say !

Ser. Let us be *quite* alone.

Por. Julia, leave us.

Ser. Flora, go with her.

Julia. Come, shall we go up to the gallery,  
And see the ships come in ?

Flora. Madam, so please you.

[*Exeunt* FLORA and JULIA.]

Ser. Well, are we *quite* alone ?

Por. Yes, quite.

Ser. All gone,  
And none to overhear us ?

Por. None.

Ser. Porcia,  
You knew me once when I was happy !

Por. Yes,  
Or thought you so—

Ser. But now most miserable !

Por. How so, my Serafina ?

Ser. You shall hear—  
Yes, my Porcia, you remember it,—  
That happy, happy time when you and I  
Were so united that, our hearts attun'd  
To perfect unison, one might believe  
That but one soul within two bodies lodg'd.  
This you remember ?

Por. Oh, how could I forget !

Ser. Think it not strange that so far back I trace  
The first beginnings of *another* love,  
Whose last sigh having now to breathe, whose last  
Farewell to sigh, and whose deceased hopes  
In one last obsequy to commemorate,  
I tell it over to you point by point

From first to last—by such full utterance  
My pent up soul perchance may find relief.

*Por.* Speak, Serafina.

*Ser.* You have not forgot  
Neither, how that close intimacy of ours  
Brought with it of necessity some courtesies  
Between me and your brother, Don Alvaro—  
Whose very name, oh wretched that I am !  
Makes memory, like a trodden viper, turn,  
And fix a fang in me not sharp enough  
To slay at once, but with a lingering death  
Infect my life—

*Por.* Nay, calm yourself.

*Ser.* We met,  
Porcia—and from those idle meetings love  
Sprang up between us both—for though 'tis true  
That at the first I laugh'd at his advances,  
And turn'd his boyish suit into disdain,  
Yet true it also is that in my heart  
There lurk'd a lingering feeling yet behind,  
Which if not wholly love, at least was liking,  
In the sweet twilight of whose unris'n sun  
My soul as yet walk'd hesitatingly.  
For, my Porcia, there is not a woman,  
Say what she will, and virtuous as you please,

Who, being lov'd, resents it : and could he  
Who most his mistress's disfavour mourns  
Look deeply down enough into her heart,  
He'd see, however high she carries it,  
Some grateful recognition lurking there  
Under the muffle of affected scorn.  
You know how I repell'd your brother's suit :  
How ever when he wrote to me I tore  
His letters—would not listen when he spoke—  
And when, relying on my love for you,  
Through you he tried to whisper his for me,  
I quarrell'd with yourself—quarrell'd the more  
The more you spoke for him. He wept—I laugh'd;  
Knelt in my path—I turn'd another way ;  
Though who had seen deep down into my heart,  
Had also seen love struggling hard with pride.  
Enough—at last one evening as I sat  
Beside a window looking on the sea,  
Wrapt in the gathering night he stole unseen  
Beside me. After whispering all those vows  
Of love which lovers use, and I pass by,  
He press'd me to be his. Touch'd by the hour,  
The mask of scorn fell from my heart, and Love  
Reveal'd himself, and from that very time  
Grew unconceal'd between us—yet, Porcia,

Upon mine honour, (for I tell thee *all*,)  
Always in honour bounded. At that time  
In an ill hour my father plann'd a marriage  
Between me and Don Juan—yours, you know,  
Came here to Naples, whence he sent your brother,  
I know not on what business, into Spain ;  
And we agreed, I mean Alvaro and I,  
Rather than vex two fathers at one time  
By any declaration of our vows,  
'Twere best to keep them secret—at the least,  
'Till his return from Spain. Ah, Porcia,  
When yet did love not thrive by secrecy ?  
We parted—he relying on my promise,  
I on his quick return. Oh, mad are those  
Who, knowing that a storm is up, will yet  
Put out to sea. Alvaro went—my father  
Urged on this marriage with my cousin. Oh !—

*Por.* You are ill, Serpina !

*Ser.*

Nothing—nothing—

I reason'd—wept—implor'd—excus'd—delay'd—  
In vain—O mercy, Heaven !

*Por.*

Tell me no more :

It is too much for you.

*Ser.*

Then suddenly

We heard that he was dead—your brother—drown'd—

They married me—and now perhaps he lives.  
They say—Porcia, can it be ?—I know not  
Whether to hope or dread if that be true :—  
And every wind that blows your father hope  
Makes my blood cold ; I know that I shall meet him,  
Here or upon the seas—dead or alive—  
Methinks I see him now !—Help ! help ! [Swoons.

*Por.*

Serafina !—

She has fainted !—Julia ! Flora !—

*Enter ALVARO.*

*Alv.*

My Porcia !

*Alv.* Alvaro ! (*They embrace.*)

*Alv.* I have outrun the shower of compliment  
On my escapes—which you shall hear anon—  
'To catch you to my heart.

*Por.*

Oh joy and terror !

Look there !—

*Alv.*

Serafina !

And sleeping too !

*Por.*

Oh, swooning ! see to her

Till I get help.

[*Exit.*

*Ser. (in her swoon).* Mercy, mercy !

Alvaro, slay me not !—I am not guilty !—

Indeed I am not !—



*Alv.* She dreams—and dreams of me—but very strangely—

Serafina !—

*Ser. (waking).* Dead !—or return'd alive to curse and slay me !—

But I am innocent !—I could not help—

They told me you were dead—and are you not ?—

And I must marry him—

*Alv.* Must marry ?—whom ?—

Why, you are dreaming still—

Awake !—'tis your Alvaro— (*Offers to embrace her.*)

*Ser.* No, no, no—

I dare not—

*Alv.* Dare not !

*Enter PORCIA, FLORA, JULIA.*

*Por.* Quick, quick !

*Flora.* My lady !

*Julia.* My lord alive again !

*Alv.* Porcia, come hither—I am not alive,  
Till I have heard the truth—nay, if't be true  
That she has hinted and my heart forebodes,  
I shall be worse than dead—

[*Retires with PORCIA to back of Stage.*]

*Enter JUAN and PEDRO.*

*Juan.* What is the matter ?—  
My Serafina !

*Pedro.* We have hurried back,  
Told of your sudden seizure—What is it ?

*Ser.* The very heart within me turn'd to ice.

*Juan.* But you are better now ?—

*Ser.* Yes—better—pray,  
Be not uneasy for me.

*Alv. (to PORCIA in the rear).* This is true then !

*Por.* Nay, nay, be not so desperate, Alvaro,  
Hearing but half the story—no fault of hers—  
I'll tell you all anon. Come, Serafina,  
I'll see you to your chamber.

*Pedro.* She will be better soon—

*Juan.* Lean upon me, my love—so—so.

*Alv.* Oh, fury !

*Ser.* Oh, would to heaven these steps should be  
my last,  
Leading not to my chamber, but my grave !

*Por. (to ALVARO).* Wait here—compose yourself  
—I shall be back

Directly. [*Exeunt PORCIA, SERAFINA, and JUAN.*

*Alv.* She is married—broke her troth—

And I escaped from death and slavery  
To find her—but the prince !—Oh weariness !

*Enter the PRINCE ORSINO, CELIO, DON LUIS, and Train.*

*Prince.* Each day, Don Luis, I become your debtor  
For some new courtesy.

*Luis.* My lord, 'tis I  
Who by such small instalments of my duty  
Strive to pay back in part the many favours  
You shower upon your servant. And this last,  
Of bringing back Alvaro to my arms,  
Not all my life, nor life itself, could pay.

*Prince.* Small thanks to me, Don Luis ; but indeed  
The strangest chance—two chances—two escapes—  
First from the sinking ship upon a spar,  
Then from the Algerine who pick'd him up,  
Carried him captive off—  
He first adroitly through their fingers slipping  
That little harbinger of hope to you,  
And then, at last, himself escaping back  
To Barcelona, where you know I was—  
If glad to welcome, house, and entertain  
Any distress Italian, how much more,  
Both for his own sake and for yours, your son,  
So making him, I trust, a friend for life.

*Alv.* Rather a humble follower, my lord.

*Luis.* I have no words to thank you—we shall hear  
The whole tale from Alvaro by and by—  
To make us merry—once so sad to him.  
Meanwhile, Alvaro, thou hast seen thy sister ?

*Alv.* Yes, sir—

*Luis.* Oh what a joy 'tis to see thee !

*Prince.* A day of general joy.

*Alv. (aside).* Indeed !—

*Prince.* Especially

To her, Alvaro—

*Alv.* Sir ?

*Prince.* I mean your sister.

*Alv.* Yes, my lord — no — I am not sure, my  
lord—

A friend of her is suddenly so ill,

My sister is uneasy—

*Luis.* Serafina !

Indeed !—I know your Highness will forgive

My seeing to her straight. [Exit.

*Alv.* And I, my lord,

Would fain see some old faces once again

As soon as may be.

*Prince.* Nay, no more excuse—

Follow your pleasure.

*Alv. (aside).* 'Tis no friend I seek,  
But my one deadliest enemy—myself. *[Exit.*

*Prince.* Celio, I think we have well nigh ex-  
hausted

The world of compliment, and wasted it :  
For I begin to doubt that word and deed  
Are wasted all in vain.

*Celio.* How so, my lord ?

*Prince.* Why, if I never am to see Porcia  
Whom I have come so far and fast to see—

*Cel.* *Never*, my lord ! her father's guest is ill,  
And she for a few minutes—

*Prince.* *Minutes*, Celio !  
Knowest thou not minutes are years to lovers ?

*Cel.* I know that lovers are strange animals.

*Prince.* Ah, you have never loved.

*Cel.* No, good my lord,  
I'm but a looker-on ; or in the market  
Just give and take the current coin of love—  
Love her that loves me ; and, if she forget,  
Forget her too.

*Prince.* Ah, then I cannot wonder  
You wonder so at my impatience ;  
For he that cannot love, can be no judge  
Of him that does.

*Cel.* How so ?

*Prince.* I'll tell thee, Celio.

He who far off beholds another dancing,  
Even one who dances best, and all the time  
Hears not the music that he dances to,  
Thinks him a madman, apprehending not  
The law that rules his else eccentric action.  
So he that's in himself insensible  
Of love's sweet influence, misjudges him  
Who moves according to love's melody :  
And knowing not that all these sighs and tears,  
Ejaculations, and impatiences,  
Are necessary changes of a measure,  
Which the divine musician plays, may call  
The lover crazy ; which he would not do  
Did he within his own heart hear the tune  
Play'd by the great musician of the world.

*Cel.* Well, I might answer, that, far off or near,  
Hearing or not the melody you tell of,  
The man is mad who dances to it. But  
Here is your music.

*Enter PORCIA.*

*Porcia.* I left my brother here but now.

*Prince.*

But now,

Sweet Porcia, you see he is not here—  
By that so seeming earnest search for him  
Scarce recognising me, if you would hint  
At any seeming slight of mine toward you,  
I plead not guilty—

*Por.*

You mistake, my lord—

Did I believe my recognition  
Of any moment to your Excellency,  
I might perhaps evince it in complaint,  
But not in slight.

*Prince.*

Complaint !—

*Por.*

Yes, sir—complaint.

*Prince.*

Complaint of what ? I knowing, Porcia,  
And you too knowing well, the constant love  
That I have borne you since the happy day  
When first we met in Naples—

*Por.*

No, my lord—

You mean my love to you, not yours to me—  
Unwearied through your long forgetful absence.

*Prince.*

How easily, Porcia, would my love  
Prove to you its unchanged integrity,  
Were it not that our friends—

*Por.*

Your friends indeed,

Who stop a lame apology at the outset.

*Enter SERAFINA.*

*Serafina.* I cannot rest, Porcia, and am come  
To seek it in your arms—but who is this ?

*Por.* The Prince Orsino.

*Ser.* Pardon me, my lord—  
I knew you not—coming so hurriedly,  
And in much perturbation.

*Prince.* Nay, lady,  
I owe you thanks for an embarrassment  
Which hides my own.

*Ser.* Let it excuse beside  
What other courtesies I owe your Highness,  
But scarce have words to pay. Heaven guard your  
Highness—

Suffer me to retire. *[Exit.*

*Por.* I needs must after her, my lord. But tell me,  
When shall I hear your vindication ?—  
To-night ?

*Prince.* Ay, my Porcia, if you will.

*Por.* Till night farewell, then. *[Exit.*

*Prince.* Farewell.—Celio,  
Didst ever see so fair an apparition,  
As her who came and went so suddenly ?  
*Cel.* Indeed, so sweetly mannered when surprised,  
She must be exquisite in her composure.



*Prince.* Who is she ?

*Gel.* Nay, my lord, just come with you,  
I know as little—

What ! a new tune to dance to ?—

*Prince.* In good time,  
Here comes Alvaro.

*Enter ALVARO.*

*Alvaro.* How restless is the sickness of the soul !  
I scarce had got me from this fatal place,  
And back again—

*Prince.* Alvaro !

*Alv.* My lord—

*Prince.* Who is the lady that was here anon ?

*Alv.* Lady, my lord—what lady ?

*Prince.* She that went  
A moment hence—I mean your sister's guest.

*Alv.* (This drop was wanting !)  
My lord, the daughter of a nobleman  
Of very ancient blood—  
Don Pedro Castellano.

*Prince.* And her name ?

*Alv.* Serafina.

*Prince.* And a most seraphic lady !

*Alv.* You never saw her, sir, before ?

*Prince.* No, surely.

*Alv. (aside).* Would I had never done so !

*Prince.* And in the hasty glimpse I had,  
I guess her mistress of as fair a mind  
As face.

*Alv.* Yes, sir—

*Prince.* She lives in Naples, eh ?

*Alv.* No—on her way  
To Spain, I think—

*Prince.* Indeed !—To Spain. Why that ?

*Alv.* (How much more will he ask ?)  
My lord, her husband—

*Prince.* She is married then ?—

*Alv.* Torture !

*Prince.* And who so blest to call her his,  
Alvaro ?

*Alv.* Sir, Don Juan Roca, her cousin.

*Prince.* Roca ? Don Juan Roca ? Do I know  
him ?

*Alv.* I think you must ; he came, sir, with my  
father

To wait upon your Grace.

*Prince.* Don Juan Roca !

No ; I do not remember him—should not  
Know him again.

*Enter DON LUIS.*

*Luis.* My lord, if my old love  
And service for your Highness may deserve  
A favour at your hands—

*Prince.* They only wait  
Until your tongue has named it.

*Luis.* This it is then—  
The captain of the galleys, good my lord,  
In which your Highness came,  
Tells me that, having landed you, he lies  
Under strict orders to return again  
Within an hour.

*Prince.* 'Tis true.

*Luis.* Now, good my lord,  
The ships, when they go back, must carry with them  
Some friends who, long time look'd for, just are come,  
And whom I fain—

*Prince.* Nay, utter not a wish  
I know I must unwillingly deny.

*Alvaro.* Confusion on confusion !

*Prince.* I have pledg'd  
My word to Don Garcia of Toledo  
The galleys should not pass an hour at Naples.<sup>c</sup>  
I feel for you—and for myself, alas !

So sweet a freight they carry with them. But  
I dare not—and what folly to adore  
A Beauty lost to me before I found it !

[*Exeunt PRINCE and CELIO.*]

*Luis.* And those I so had long'd for, to avenge  
Their long estrangement by as long a welcome,  
Snatcht from me almost ere we'd shaken hands !—  
Is not this ill, Alvaro ?

*Alv.* Ill indeed.

*Luis.* And, as they needs must go, my hospitality,  
Foil'd in its spring, must turn to wound myself  
By speeding their departure. (*Going.*)

*Alv.* Sir, a moment.

Although his Highness would not, or could not,  
Grant you the boon your services deserv'd,  
Let not that, I beseech you, indispose you  
From granting one to me.

*Luis.* What is't, Alvaro ?  
'Twere strange could I refuse you anything.

*Alv.* You sent me, sir, on state affairs to Spain,  
But being wreckt and captur'd, as you know,  
All went undone.  
Another opportunity now offers ;  
The ships are ready, let me go and do  
That which perforce I left undone before.

*Luis.* What else could'st thou have askt,  
In all the category of my means,  
Which I, methinks, had grudg'd thee ! No, Alvaro,  
The treacherous sea must not again be trusted  
With the dear promise of my only son.

*Alv.* Nay, for that very reason, I entreat you  
To let me go, sir. Let it not be thought  
The blood that I inherited of you  
Quail'd at a common danger.

*Luis.* I admire  
Your resolution, but you must not go,  
At least not now.  
Beside, the business you were sent upon  
Is done by other hands, or let go by  
For ever.

*Alv.* Nay, sir—

*Luis.* Nay, Alvaro. [*Exit.*

*Alv.* He is resolved. And Serafina,  
To whose divinity I offered up  
My heart of hearts, a purer sacrifice  
Than ever yet on pagan altar blaz'd,  
Has play'd me false, is married to another,  
And now will fly away on winds and seas,  
As fleeting as herself.  
Then what remains but that I die ? My death

The necessary shadow of that marriage !  
Comfort !—what boots it looking after that  
Which never can be found ? The worst is come,  
Which 'twere a blind and childish waste of hope  
To front with any visage but despair.  
Ev'n that one single solace, were there one,  
Of ringing my despair into her ears,  
Fails me. Time presses ; the accursed breeze  
Blows foully fair. The vessel flaps her sails  
'That is to bear her from me. Look, she comes—  
And from before her dawning beauty all  
I had to say fades from my swimming brain,  
And chokes upon my tongue.

*Enter SERAFINA, drest as at first, and PORCIA.*

*Porcia.* And must we part so quickly ?—

*Serafina.* When does happiness

Last longer ?

*Alv.* Never !—who best can answer that ?

I standing by, why ask it of another ?

At least when speaking of such happiness

As, perjur'd woman, thy false presence brings !

*Ser.* Alvaro, for Heaven's sake spare me the pang  
Of these unjust reproaches.

*Alv.* What ! unjust !

*Ser.* Why, is it not unjust, condemning one  
Without defence ?

*Alv.* Without defence indeed !

*Ser.* Not that I have not a most just defence,  
But that you will not listen.

*Alv.* Serafina,  
I listen'd ; but what wholly satisfies  
The criminal may ill suffice the judge ;  
And in love's court especially, a word  
Has quite a different meaning to the soul  
Of speaker and of hearer. Yet once more,  
Speak.

*Ser.* To what purpose ! I can but repeat  
What I have told your sister, and she you,—  
What on the sudden waking from my swoon,  
I, who had thought you dead so long, Alvaro,  
Spoke in my terror, suddenly seeing you  
Alive, before me.

*Alv.* I were better, then,  
Dead than alive ?

*Ser.* I know not—were you dead  
I might in honour weep for you, Alvaro ;  
Living, I must not.

*Alv.* Nay, then, whether you

Forswear me living or lament me dead,  
Now you must hear me ; if you strike the wound,  
Is it not just that you should hear the cry ?

*Ser.* I must not.

*Alv.* But I say you must.

*Ser.* Porcia,  
Will you not help me when my life and honour  
Are thus at stake ?

*Alv.* Porcia's duty lies  
In keeping watch that no one interrupt us.  
*Porcia.* Between the two confus'd, I yield at last  
To him, both as my brother, Serafina,  
And for his love to you. Compose yourself ;  
I shall be close at hand, no harm can happen.  
And let him weep at least who has lost all. [*Exit.*

*Ser.* If I am forc'd to hear you then, Alvaro,  
You shall hear me too, once more, once for all,  
Freely confessing that I loved you once ;  
Ay, long and truly loved you. When all hope  
Of being yours with your reported death  
Had died, then, yielding to my father's wish,  
I wed another, and am—what I am.  
So help me, Heaven, Alvaro, this is all !

*Alv.* How can I answer if you weep ?

*Ser.* No, no,



I do not weep, or, if I do, 'tis but  
My eyes,—no more, no deeper.

*Alv.* Is 't possible you can so readily  
Turn warm compassion into cold disdain !  
And are your better pulses so controll'd  
By a cold heart, that, to enhance the triumph  
Over the wretched victim of your eyes,  
You make the fount of tears to stop or flow  
Just as you please ? If so, teach me the trick,  
As the last courtesy you will vouchsafe me.

*Ser.* Alvaro, when I think of what I was,  
My tears will forth ; but when of what I am,  
My honour bids them cease.

*Alv.* You *do* feel then—

*Ser.* Nay, I'll deny it not.

*Alv.* That, being another's—

*Ser.* Nay, no argument—

*Alv.* These tears—

*Ser.* What tears ?

*Alv.* Are the relenting rain  
On which the Iris of my hope may ride ;  
Or a sweet dew—

*Ser.* Alvaro—

*Alv.* That foretells  
That better day when in these arms again—

*Ser.* Those arms ! Alvaro, when that day shall  
come  
May heaven's thunder strike me dead at once !  
(*Cannon within.*)  
Mercy, what's that ?

*Enter PORCIA.*

*Porcia.* A signal from the ship,  
'Tis time : your father and Don Juan now  
Are coming for you.

*Alv.* O heavens !

*Por.* Compose yourself,  
And you, Alvaro—(*Motions him back.*)

*Enter DON JUAN, LUIS, PEDRO, LEONELO, &C.*

*Luis.* Lady, believe how sadly I am come  
To do you this last office.

*Juan.* Trembling still ?—  
But come, perhaps the sea-breeze, in requital  
Of bearing us away from those we love,  
May yet revive you.

*Luis.* Well, if it must be so,  
Lady, your hand. Porcia, come with us.

[*Exeunt all but ALVARO.*

---

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A room in DON JUAN's house at Barcelona :  
he is discovered painting SERAFINA.*

*It gradually grows dusk.*

*Juan.* Are you not wearied sitting ?

*Serafina.*

Surely not

Till you be wearied painting.

*Juan.*

Oh, so much

As I have wish'd to have that divine face

Painted, and by myself, I now begin

To wish I had not wish'd it.

*Ser.*

But why so ?

*Juan.* Because I must be worsted in the trial  
I have brought on myself.

*Ser.*

You to despair,

Who never are outdone but by yourself !

*Juan.* Even so.

*Ser.*

But *why* so ?

*Juan.*

Shall I tell you why ?

Painters, you know, (just turn your head a little,)

Are nature's apes, whose uglier semblances,

Made up of disproportion and excess,

Like apes, they easily can imitate :

But whose more gracious aspect, the result  
Of subtlest symmetries, they only outrage,  
Turning true beauty into caricature.  
The perfecter her beauty, the more complex  
And hard to follow ; but her perfection  
Impossible.

*Ser.* That I dare say is true,  
But surely not in point with me, whose face  
Is surely far from perfect.

*Juan.* Far indeed  
From what is perfect call'd, but far beyond,  
Not short of it ; so that indeed my reason  
Was none at all.

*Ser.* Well now then the true reason  
Of your disgust.

*Juan.* Yet scarcely my disgust,  
When you continue still the cause of it.  
Well then, to take the matter up again—  
The object of this act, (pray, look at me,  
And do not laugh, Serafina,) is to seize  
Those subtlest symmetries that, as I said,  
Are subtlest in the loveliest ; and though  
It has been half the study of my life  
To recognise and represent true beauty,  
I had not dreamt of such excess of it

As yours ; nor can I, when before my eyes,  
Take the clear image in my trembling soul ;  
And therefore if that face of yours exceed  
Imagination, and imagination  
(As it must do) the pencil ; then my picture  
Can be but the poor shadow of a shade.  
Besides,—

*Ser.* Can there be anything besides ?

*Juan.* 'Tis said that fire and light, and air and  
snow,

Cannot be painted ; how much less a face  
Where they are so distinct, yet so compounded,  
As needs must drive the artist to despair !  
I'll give it up.—(*Throws away his brushes, &c.*) The  
light begins to fail too.

And, Serafina, pray remember this.  
If, tempted ever by your loveliness,  
And fresh presumption that forgets defeat,  
I'd have you sit again, allow me not,—  
It does but vex me.

*Ser.* Nay, if it do that  
I will not, Juan, or let me die for it,—  
Come, there's an oath upon 't.

*Juan.* A proper curse  
On that rebellious face.

*Enter LEONELO.*

*Leonelo.* And here comes in a story :—

A man got suddenly deaf, and seeing the people about him moving their lips, quoth he, "What the devil makes you all dumb?" never thinking for a moment the fault might be in himself. So it is with you, who lay the blame on a face that all the world is praising, and not on your own want of skill to paint it.

*Juan.* Not a very apt illustration, Leonelo, as you would admit if you heard what I was saying before you came in. But, whose soever the fault, I am the sufferer. I will no more of it, however. Come, I will abroad.

*Ser.* Whither, my lord?

*Juan.* Down to the picr, with the sea and the fresh air, to dispel my vexation.

*Ser.* By quitting me?

*Juan.* I might indeed say so, since the sight of you is the perpetual trophy of my defeat. But what if I leave you in order to return with a double zest?

*Ser.* Nay, nay, with no such pretty speeches hope to delude me; I know what it is. The carnival with its fair masks.

*Juan.* A mask abroad when I have that face at home!

*Ser.* Nay, nay, I know you.

*Juan.* Better than I do myself?

*Ser.* What wife does not?

*Leon.* Just so. A German and the priest of his village coming to high words one day, because the man blew his swine's horn under the priest's window, the priest calls out in a rage, "I'll denounce your horns to the parish, I will!" which the man's wife overhearing in the scullery, she cries out, "Halloa, neighbour, here is the priest revealing my confession!"

*Ser.* What impertinence, Leonelo.

*Leon.* Very well then, listen to this; a certain man in Barcelona had five or six children, and one day—

*Juan.* Peace, foolish fellow.

*Leon.* Those poor children will never get the meat well into their mouths.

*Juan.* Farewell, my love, awhile.

[*Exeunt*] *JUAN and LEONELO.*

*Ser.*

Farewell, my lord.

Thou little wicked Cupid,  
I am amused to find how by degrees  
The wound your arrows in my bosom made,  
And made to run so fast with tears, is healing.  
Yea, how those very arrows and the bow

'That did such mischief, being snapt asunder—  
'Thyself art tamed to a good household child.

*Enter FLORA, out of breath.*

*Flora.* O madam !

*Ser.* Well, Flora, what now ?

*Flora.* O madam, there is a man down-stairs !

*Ser.* Well ?

*Flora.* Drest sailor-like.

*Ser.* Well ?

*Flora.* He will not go away unless I give this letter into your hands.

*Ser.* Into my hands ? from whom ?

*Flora.* From the lady Porcia he says, madam.

*Ser.* From Porcia, well, and what frightens you ?

*Flora.* Nothing, madam, and yet—

*Ser.* And yet there is something.

*Flora.* O, my lady, if this should be Don Alvaro !

*Ser.* Don Alvaro ! what makes you think that ?

*Flora.* I am sure it is he.

*Ser.* But did you tell him you knew him ?

*Flora.* I could not help, madam, in my surprise.

*Ser.* And what said he then ?

*Flora.* That I must tell you he was here.

*Ser.* Alvaro !—



Flora, go back, tell him you dared not tell me,  
Fearful of my rebuke, and say beside,  
As of your own advice, that it is fit,  
Both for himself and me,  
That he depart immediately.

*Flora.*

Yes, madam.

*As she is going, enter ALVARO, as a Sailor.*

*Alvaro.* No need. Seeing Don Juan leave his  
house,  
I have made bold to enter, and have heard  
What Flora need not to repeat.

*Ser.* Nay, sir,  
Rather it seems as if you had not heard ;  
Seeing the most emphatic errand was  
To bid you hence.

*Alv.* So might it seem perhaps,  
Inexorable beauty : but you know  
How one delinquency another breeds ;  
And having come so far, and thus disguised,  
Only to worship at your shrine, Serafina,  
(I dare not talk of love,) I do beseech you  
Do not so frown at my temerity,  
As to reject the homage that it brings.

*Ser.* Don Alvaro,  
If thus far I have listen'd, think it not  
Warrant of further importunity.  
I could not help it—'tis with dread and terror  
That I have heard thus much ; I now beseech you,  
Since you profess you came to honour me,  
Show that you did so truly by an act  
That shall become your honour well as mine.

*Alv.* Speak, Serafina.

*Ser.* Leave me so at once,  
And without further parley,  
That I may be assured *you* are assured  
That lapse of time, my duty as a wife,  
My husband's love for me, and mine for him,  
My station and my name, all have so changed me,  
That winds and waves might sooner overturn  
Not the oak only,  
But the eternal rock on which it grows,  
Than you my heart, though sea and sky themselves  
Join'd in the tempest of your sighs and tears.

*Alv.* But what if I remember other times  
When Serafina was no stubborn oak,  
Resisting wind and wave, but a fair flower  
That open'd to the sun of early love,  
And follow'd him along the golden day :

No barren heartless rock,  
But a fair temple in whose sanctuary  
Love was the idol, daily and nightly fed  
With sacrifice of one whole human heart.

*Ser.* I do not say 'twas not so ;  
But, sir, to carry back the metaphor  
Your ingenuity has turn'd against me,  
That tender flower, transplanted it may be  
To other skies and soil, might in good time  
Strike down such roots and strengthen such a stem  
As were not to be shook : the temple, too,  
Though seeming slight to look on, being yet  
Of nature's fundamental marble built,  
When once that foolish idol was dethroned,  
And the true God set up into his place,  
Might stand unscathed in sanctity and worship,  
For ages and for ages.

*Alv.* Serafina,  
Why talk to me of ages, when the account  
Of my misfortune and your cruelty  
Measures itself by hours, and not by years !  
It was but yesterday you loved me, yes,  
Loved me, and (let the metaphor run on)  
I never will believe it ever was,  
Or is, or ever can be possible

That the fair flower so soon forgot the sun  
To which so long she owed and turn'd her beauty,  
To love the baser mould in which she grew :  
Or that the temple could so soon renounce  
Her old god, true god too while he was there,  
For any cold and sober deity  
Which you may venerate, but cannot love,  
Newly set up.

*Ser.* I must leave metaphor,  
And take to sober sense ; nor is it right,  
Alvaro, that you strive  
To choke the virtuous present with the past,  
Which, when it was the past, was virtuous too,  
But would be guilty if reiterate.  
Nor is it right, nor courteous, certainly,  
Doubting what I declare of my own heart ;  
Nay, you who do yourself affirm, Alvaro,  
How well I loved you when such love was lawful  
Are bound to credit me when I declare  
That love is now another's.

*Alv.* Serafina—

*Juan (speaking within).* Light, light, there !

*Enter FLORA hurriedly.*

*Flora.* Madam, my lord, my lord.

*Alv.* Confusion !

*Ser.* O ye heavens !

*Flora.* The old lover's story.

Brother or husband sure to interrupt.

*Juan (within).* A light there, Flora ! Serafina !  
night

Set in, and not a lamp lit in the house ?

*Alv.* He comes.

*Ser.* And I am lost !

*Flora.* Quick, Don Alvaro,

Into this closet, till my lord be gone

Into his chamber ; in, in, in !

*Alv.* My fears

Are all for you, not for myself. [*Hides in the closet.*

*Flora.* In, in ! [*Exit.*

*Juan (entering).* How is it there's no light ?

*Ser.* She had forgot—

But here it comes.

*Enter FLORA with lights.*

'Twas kind of you my lord,

So quickly back again—

Sooner than I expected.

*Juan.* Yes, a friend

Caught hold of me just as I reach'd the pier,

And told me to get home again.

*Ser. (aside).* My heart !

*Juan.* And wherefore do you think ?

*Ser.* Nay, I know not.

*Juan.* To tell you of a festival, Serafina,  
Preparing in your honour.

*Ser. (aside).* I breathe again.

*Juan.* The story's this. It is the carnival,  
You know, and, by a very ancient usage,  
To-morrow all the folk of Barcelona,  
Highest as well as lowest, men and women,  
Go abroad mask'd to dance and see the shows.  
And you being newly come, they have devised  
A dance and banquet for you, to be held  
In Don Diego's palace, looking forth  
So pleasantly (do you remember it ?)  
Upon the seas. And therefore for their sake,  
And mine, my Serafina, you must for once  
Eclipse that fair face with the ugly mask ;  
I'll find you fitting dress,—what say you ?

*Ser.* Nay,

What should I say but that your will is mine,  
In this as evermore ?

And now you speak of dress, there are ev'n now  
Some patterns brought me in the nick of time

To choose from, in my chamber ; prithee come,  
And help me judge.

*Juan.* I would that not your robe  
Only, but all the ground on which you walk  
Were laced with diamond.

*Ser.* What not done yet  
With compliment ? Come—come. (*She takes a light.*)

*Juan.* But wherefore this ?

*Ser.* My duty is to wait upon you.

*Juan.* No.  
'Take the lamp, Flora.

*Ser.* Flora waits on me,  
And I on you.

*Juan.* What humour's this ?  
But be it as you will. [*Exeunt JUAN and SERAFINA.*

*Flora* (*letting out ALVARO*). Now is the time,  
Signor Alvaro ! hist !

The coast is clear, but silently and swiftly—  
Follow—but, hush ! stop ! wait !

*Alv.* What now ?

*Flora.* A moment !  
Back, back, 'tis Leonelo.

*Alv.* Put out the light, I can slip past him.

*Flora* (*falls putting out light*). No sooner said than  
done. O Lord, Lord, Lord !

*Enter LEONELO.*

*Leon.* What is the matter ?

*Flora.* The matter is, I have fallen.

*Leon.* Into temptation ?

*Flora.* It is well, sir, if I have not broken my leg ; here, sir, cease your gibing, and get this lamp lighted directly.

*Leon.* (*stumbling over ALVARO*). Halloo !

*Flora.* What now ?

*Leon.* I've fallen now, and on your temptation I think, for it has got a beard.

*Alv.* (*groping his way*). The fool ! but I can find the door. *[Exit.*

*Leon.* There goes some one !

*Flora.* The man's mad !

*Leon.* Am I ? Halloo ! halloo, there !

*Enter JUAN with light.*

*Juan.* What is the matter ?

*Flora.* Nothing, nothing, my lord.

*Leon.* Nothing ? I say it is something, a great—

*Flora.* My lord, going to shut the door, I stumbled, fell, and put out the light, that's all.



*Leon.* And I stumbled too.

*Juan.* Well ?

*Leon.* Over a man.

*Juan.* In this chamber ?

*Leon.* Yes, and—

*Flora.* Nonsense ! my lord, he stumbled against me, as we both floundered in the dark.

*Leon.* You ! What have you done with your beard then ?

*Juan.* Are you mad ? or is this some foolery ?

*Leon.* My lord, I swear I stumbled over a fellow here.

*Juan. (aside.)* And she so anxious to light me to her chamber ! what is all this ? Take the lamp, Leonelo. Though partly I think you have been dreaming, I will yet search the house ; come with me. I will draw the sting of suspicion at once, come what may. [*Draws sword and exit.*]

*Flora (to LEON.).* All of your work. A murrain on your head.

Making this pother.

*Leon.* Minx ! what is said, is said.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II.—*The garden of DON LUIS' palace at Naples ;  
a window with a balcony on one side, or in front :—  
night. Enter the PRINCE and CELIO muffled up.*

*Celio.* Still sighing ? pardon me, your Highness,  
but

This melancholy is a riddle to me.

*Prince.* Ah, Celio, so strange a thing is love,  
The sighs you think are melancholy sighs,  
Yet are not so ; I have indeed drunk poison,  
But love the taste of it.

*Cel.* I used to think  
'Twas all of being away from your Porcia ;  
But now when better starr'd, her brother absent,  
Her father unsuspicious, at her bidding  
Night after night you come beneath her lattice,  
And yet—

*Prince.* If Porcia be not the cause  
Of my complaint she cannot be the cure :  
Yet (such is love's pathology) she serves  
To soothe the wound another made.

*Cel.* Who then was she, my lord, for whose fair  
sake  
You cannot either love this loving lady,  
Nor leave her ?

*Prince.* I would tell you, Celio,  
But you would laugh at me.

*Cel.* Tell me, however.

*Prince.* Rememberest not the lady whom we saw  
For a few minutes, like some lovely vision,  
In this same house a little while ago,  
Not Porcia, but her diviner guest ?

*Cel.* Oh, I remember ; is it then to be  
The specialty of your Highness' love,  
That, whereas other men's dies off by absence,  
Yours quickens—if it can be love at all  
Caught from one transitory glance.

*Prince.* Nay, Celio ;  
Because a cloud may cover up the sun  
At his first step into the firmament,  
Are we to say he never rose at all ?  
Are we to say the lightning did not flash  
Because it did but flash, or that the fountain  
Never ran fresh because it ran so fast  
Into its briny cradle and its grave ?  
My love, if 'twere but of one moment born,  
And but a moment living, yet was love ;  
And love it *is*, now living with my life.

(*A harp heard.*)

*Cel.* O fine comparisons ! but hark, I hear

The widow'd turtle in the leaves away  
Calling her faithless mate.

*Prince.* Yes, Celio, 'tis  
Porcia—if she sings to me of *love*,  
I am to approach the window ; but if *jealousy*,  
I am to keep aloof. Listen !

*Porcia (singing within).*

Of all the shafts to Cupid's bow,  
The first is tipt with fire ;  
All bare their bosoms to the blow,  
And call the wound Desire.

(*She appears at the window.*)

*Prince.* Ah ! I was waiting, lovely Porcia,  
Till your voice drew me by the notes of love,  
Or distanc'd me by those of jealousy.

*Por.* Which needs not music, prince, to signify,  
Being love's plain, prose history.

*Prince.* Not always ;  
For instance, I know one,  
Who, to refute your theory, Porcia,  
Attracts men by her jealousy as much  
As she repels them by her love.

*Por.* Nay, then  
Men must be stranger beings than I thought.

*Prince.* I know not how that is, I only know

That in love's empire, as in others empire,  
Rebellion sometimes prospers.

*Por.* That the night  
Would give us leave to argue out their point !  
Which yet I fear it will not.

*Prince.* Why ?

*Por.* My father,  
Who frets about my brother's sudden absence,  
Sits up enditing letters after him ;  
And therefore I have brought my harp, that while  
We talk together I may touch the strings,  
So as he, hearing me so occupied,  
May not suspect or ask for me. Besides.  
We can talk under cover of the music.

*Prince.* Not the first time that love has found him-  
self  
Fretted, Porcia.

*Por.* Oh, the wretched jest !  
But listen—

The music is for him, the words for you,  
For I have much to tell you underneath  
This mask of music. (*Plays on the harp.*)  
You know my father has been long resolv'd  
To quit this government, and to return  
To his own country place—which resolution,

First taken on my brother's suppos'd death,  
My brother's sudden absence has revived ;  
And brought to a head—so much so, that to-morrow,  
To-morrow, he has settled to depart  
To Bellaflor—I scarce can say the words—  
But let my tears—

*Prince.* 'Tis well that you should mask  
Ill news under sweet music : though, indeed,  
A treason to make sweet the poison'd cup.

*Por.* Who more than I—

*Enter JULIA within, hurried.*

*Julia.* Madam, madam, your father  
Is gone into the garden—I hear his steps.

*Por.* Nay then—(*Sings*)

Love's second is a poison'd dart,  
And Jealousy is nam'd :  
Which carries poison to the heart  
Desire had first inflam'd.

*Prince.* She sings of jealousy—we must retire ;  
Hist, Celio ! [*CELIO and PRINCE retreat.*

*Enter LUIS.*

*Julia.* Who's there ?

*Por.* Speak !

*Luis.* Oh, I, Porcia,

Who writing in my study, and much troubled  
About your brother, was seduc'd away  
By your harp's pleasant sound and the cool night,  
To take a turn in the garden.

*Por.* Yes, sir, here

I sit, enjoying the cool air that blows  
Up from the shore among the whispering leaves.

*Luis.* What better ? but, Porcia, it grows late,  
And chilly, I think : and though I'd have you  
here

Singing like a nightingale the whole night through,  
It must not be. Will you come in ? *[Exit.*

*Por.* Directly—

I've but a moment.

*Prince (entering).* And you shall not need  
Repeat the love call, for I heard—

*Por. (playing as she speaks)* Nay, listen,  
And that attentively. To-morrow, then,  
We go to Bellaflor, (you know the place,)—  
There in the hill-top, hid among the trees,  
Is an old castle ; ours, but scarcely us'd,  
And kept by an old man who loves me well,  
And can be secret. And if you should come,  
That way by chance, as hunting it may be,  
I think we yet may meet.

*Luis (within).* Porcia !

*Por.* Sir !

*Luis (within).* It's time, indeed, to shut your window.

*Por.* Hark,

I dare no longer.

*Prince.* 'Then farewell !

*Por.* Farewell !

Remember Bellaflor : while you retreat  
Among the trees, I still shall sing to you  
Of love ; not that dark shape of jealousy,  
But in the weeds of absence.

*Prince.* A descant

That suits us both,—(*aside,*) but on a different theme.

*Por. (singing).*

The last of Cupid's arrows, all  
With heavy lead is set ;  
That vainly weeping lovers call  
Repentance or Regret.

[*As she retires still singing from the window within,  
the PRINCE and CELIO retire back into the garden.*



SCENE III. *A street before DON DIEGO's house in Barcelona.—Enter ALVARO and FABIO masked: other Masks pass across, and into DIEGO's house.*

*Alv.* This is the place ; here will I wait till she comes by. I know her dress, but I dared not follow her still myself disguised.

*Fab.* And no doubt, sir, you will find good opportunity of talking to her. 'Tis the old and acknowledged usage of this season, that any one may accost any one so long as both are masked, and so neither supposed to know the other.

*Alv.* Oh, a brave usage, and a brave invention that of the Carnival ! One may accost whom one pleases, and whisper what one will, under the very ears of husband, father, or duenna !

*Fab.* So received a custom, that even among this hot-headed jealous people of Spain, no mortal quarrel has yet arisen on these occasions, though plenty to provoke it.

*Alv.* Look ! the Masks are coming ; I hear the music within. She must soon be here. Let us withdraw round this corner till she come. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*A garden leading down to the sea ; on one side a Portico.—Masks singing and dancing ; in the course of which enter and mix with them, JUAN, SERAFINA, LEONELO, and FLORA, and afterwards ALVARO ; all masked.*

## CHORUS.

Tantara, tantara, come follow me all,  
Carnival, Carnival, Carnival.  
Follow me, follow me, nobody ask ;  
Crazy is Carnival under the mask.  
Follow me, follow me, nobody knows ;  
Under the mask is under the rose.  
Tantara, tantara, &c.

*Juan.* How like you all this uproar ?

*Ser.*

O quite well.

*Juan (aside).* And so should I,  
Did not a shadow from that darken'd room  
Trail after me. But why torment myself !

*Leon.* My lord, the dancers wait.

*Juan (to the musicians).* Pardon me. Strike up !

*Voices.* Strike up ! strike up !

C.

F

*A Voice.* The castanets !

*Voices.* The castanets ! the castanets !

*Musician.* What will you have ?

*Voices.* The Tarazana ! the Tarazana !

[*A dance, during which ALVARO observes SERAFINA.*

*Fab.* You recognise her ?

*Alv.* Yes, Fabio, my heart

Would recognise her under any dress,

And under any mask.

*Fab.* Now is your time.

*Alv. (to SERAFINA).* Mask, will you dance with me ?

*Ser.* No, Cavalier ;

You come too late.

*Alv.* Too late ?

*Ser.* I am engag'd.

*Alv.* Nevertheless—

*Ser.* Nay, sir, I am not apt

To change my mind.

*Alv.* I hop'd that in my favour

You might perhaps.

*Ser.* 'Twas a delusion.

*Alv.* But,

Fair Mask, didst never change your mind before ?

*Ser.* Perhaps once—to such purpose that that *once*  
Forbids all other.

*Juan.* Serafina, the Mask  
Has askt your hand to dance. On these occasions  
You must permit him, whether known or not.  
Unknown, the usage of the time allows ;  
If known, 'twere more discourteous to refuse.

*Ser.* My lord, 'twas chiefly upon your account  
'That I refus'd to dance with him ; if you  
Desire it, I am ready.

*Juan.* How, my love,  
On my account ?

*Ser.* Liking your company  
Much better.

*Juan.* Nay, take the humour of the time,  
And dance with him. (*Aside.*) I marvel who it is  
'That follows Serafina, and to whom,  
The very indisposition that she shows,  
Argues a kind of secret inclination.

*Alv.* Well, do you still reject me ?—

*Ser.* I am bidden  
To dance with you ; what measure will you call ?

*Alv.* Play "Love lies bleeding !"

*Ser.* But why that ?—

*Alv.* Because  
The spirit of the tune and of the words  
Moves with my heart, and gives me leave beside

Amid its soft and slow divisions .

To gaze on you and whisper in your ear.

*(A minuet by the Masks : during which ALVARO constantly whispers SERAFINA, who seems distress ; after some time, they return in the figure to the front of the Stage.)*

Ser. I've heard enough, sir ; save for courtesy  
Too much. No more.

Alv. Brief as the happiness  
That once was mine ! But—

Ser. Stay, sir, I will hear  
No more. I had not danc'd with you at all,  
But that I wish'd to tell you once for all  
How hopeless is your passion—the great danger  
Your coming hither put and puts me to,  
And that not my honour only, but my life,  
Depends upon your quitting me at once,  
Now and for ever.

Alv. Serafina !

Ser. *(aloud)*. I am tired ;  
Pardon me, friends, I cannot dance.

Juan. My love,  
What is't ? Unwell ?

Ser. I know not.

A Woman. Stop the ball !

*Another.* All in her honour too !

*Another.* What is the matter ?

*Juan.* You are but tir'd with dancing.

*Ser* No, no, no,

Let us go home.

*Juan.* Pardon us, friends,  
Continue you your revels ; we will go  
Into the house awhile, and rest ; I think  
The heat and dancing have distress her much,  
But she'll be better. To your dance again.  
Come, Serafina. (*Aside.*) Leonelo ! hither !  
Find out the Mask that with your lady danc'd.

*Leon.* I'll watch him to the world's end—or  
beyond,  
If need be.

*Juan.* Good—Come, Serafina.

[*Exeunt* JUAN and SERAFINA.]

*Alv.* So end my hopes for ever. Fool ! who  
seeking

For what once lost could never more be found,  
Like to a child after a rainbow running—  
Leaving my father, who had only just  
Recov'ed me to his old heart again,  
Without adieu—equipp'd this Brigantine  
(Down to the bottom may she go with me !)

In chase of this—not Serafina—no—  
But this false Siren,  
Who draws me with the music of her beauty,  
To leave me in destruction.

*Leon. (watching him).* This must be some monk,  
who knows of some better entertainment elsewhere.

*Alv.* And after all,  
Not one kind word of welcome or of thanks,  
But that her life depended on my leaving her,  
Who would for her have sacrificed my own  
In any way but that. But it is done !  
Henceforward I renounce all hope ; henceforth—  
And why not all despair ?—the world is wide,  
Eh, Fabio ? and the good old saw says well  
That fortune at the worst must surely mend.  
Let us to sea, the ship is ready ; come,  
Away with all this foolery. (*Throws off mask, &c.*)

*Leon.* Here is a harlequin sailor !

*Fabio.*

Well resolv'd.

*Alv.* Wear them what other fool may list,  
I'll straight aboard, and if the wind and sea  
Can rise as they were wont, I'll stretch all sail  
Toward the perdition she consigns me to.  
Halloa there ! (*Whistles.*)

*Enter* SAILORS.

*Sail.* Captain ?

*Alv.* How is't for a cruise ?

*Sail.* Oh, never better ; just a breeze to keep  
The ship from looking in her glass too long.

*Alv.* Aboard, aboard then ! Farewell all my  
hopes ;

My love, farewell for ever !

*Voices (within).* Fire ! fire ! fire !

*Alv.* What's this ?

*Voices.* Fire ! fire ! in Don Diego's palace !  
Help ! help !

*Alv.* She there ! my life shall save the life  
She said it jeopardied.

*As he is going out, enter JUAN with SERAFINA fainted in  
his arms.*

*Juan.* Friends ! Gentlemen ! if you would help  
in this calamity, take charge for a moment of this  
most precious thing of all, till I return.

*Alv. (taking SERAFINA in his arms).* Trust me, sir.

[JUAN rushes off.

*Leon.* Stop, my lord, stop a moment—he is gone,  
and this man—



*Alv.* Serafina in my arms ! my ship at hand !  
O love, O destiny !—aboard, aboard—  
O 'tis the merriest proverb of them all,  
How one man rises by his neighbour's fall.

[*Exit, carrying off* SERAFINA.]

*Leon.* Halloa ! stop him ! stop him ! it is my  
mistress ; Don Juan ! my lord ! my lord ! the rascal  
has carried her off ! my lord ! my lord !

[*Runs after* ALVARO.]

*1st Voice in the crowd.* The fire is getting under.

*2nd Voice.* No lives lost ?

*3rd Voice.* Only, they say, one poor girl of the  
lady Serafina's.

*Enter* DON JUAN *hurriedly.*

*Juan.* I thought I heard Leonelo calling me—  
But where is Serafina ? This is the place—yes—  
Serafina ? I left them here—taken her perhaps faint-  
ing as she was for help. Gentlemen, have you seen  
any here with a lady, fainted, in their charge—a sailor,  
I think ?

*1st Man.* Not I, sir.

*2nd Man.* Nor I.

*3rd Man.* Stay, I think there were some sailors  
with a lady in their arms,

*Juan.* And where—

*Enter LEONELO breathless.*

*Leon.* Oh, my lord, my lord !

*Juan.* Speak !

*Leon.* The Mask who danced with my lady—

*Juan.* Where is she ?

*Leon.* Was the sailor you gave her in charge to—  
He has carried her off.

*Juan.* The Mask ! the sailor !

*Leon.* I saw him throw off his disguise, and now  
he has carried her off—to the shore—to sea—to the  
ship there now spreading her sails in the harbour.

*Juan.* Man ! beware lest I blast thee !

*Leon.* As if I were the sailor ! I tell you I ran  
after them, shouted, struggled, but was pushed aside,  
knocked down—

*Juan.* To the shore, to the shore ! follow me !

*Voices.* What is the matter ?

*Juan.* What I dare not name till it be avenged ;  
Pirate !—Ruffian ! Oh fool, I might have guessed—  
but I will find them through water and fire too. To  
the shore !

*[Exit JUAN, LEONELO after him ; confusion, &c.]*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A room in DON LUIS' country-house near Naples. Enter DON LUIS reading a letter.*

*Luis.* "You bid me tell you why it is Don Juan Roca has not written to you so long : and though it be pain to do so, I dare no longer defer answering you. At a carnival dance here, the palace of Don Diego de Cordona, in which the festival was held, took fire so suddenly, as people had much ado to escape with their lives. Don Juan's wife fainting from terror, he carried her out, and gave her in charge to a sailor standing near, while he himself returned to help at the fire. No doubt this sailor was a pirate : for he carried her off to his ship and set sail immediately. Don Juan returning and finding her gone rushes madly after ; casts himself into the sea in his rage and desperation ; is rescued half drowned, and taken to his house, from which he was missed—he and his servant Leonelo—some days ago, taking scarce any thing with him, and leaving no hint of whither he is gone. And since that hour we have heard nothing of him, or of Serafina."

My heart prevents my eyes from reading more.  
O heavens ! to what chance and danger is  
The fortune of the happiest, and still more  
The honour of the noblest, liable !  
Ill fortune we may bear, and, if we choose,  
Sit folded in despair with dignity ;  
But honour needs must wince before a straw,  
And never rest until it be avenged.  
To know where Juan is, and by his side  
To put myself, and run all risk with him  
Till he were righted, and the offender too,  
I'd give my life and all I'm worth ; no corner  
In the wide earth but we would ferret it,  
Until—Porcia !

*Enter PORCIA.*

*Por.* Pray, sir, pardon me,  
But I would know what vexes you, you stand  
Angrily talking to yourself alone :  
'Tis this letter in your hand—What is it, sir ?

*Luis.* Nothing, nothing, Porcia ; (for Juan's sake  
I must dissemble)—Nay, I have received  
A letter upon business that annoys me.

*Por.* I'm sorry, sir, for that, for I had come  
To ask a favour of you.

*Luis.* Well, why not ? .

*Por.* They say that those who ask unseasonably  
Must be content with a refusal.

*Luis.* Nay,  
Between us two no season's out of season.

*Por.* So ? then I'll ask. Alvaro—

*Luis.* All but that !  
Ask me not that way.

*Por.* Then 'tis *not* the season.

*Luis.* The season for all else but that which never  
Can be in season. How often have I told you  
Never to speak to me again of him !

*Por.* What has my brother done, sir, after all,  
To make you so inveterate ?

*Luis.* What done !  
To leave my house, to which I only just  
Had welcomed him as only a father can,  
Without adieu, or word of when or where,  
And then as suddenly come back, forsooth,  
Knock at my door, as if he had but made  
A morning call, and think to find it open—  
It and my heart—open to him as ever.

*Por.* But may not, sir, the thoughtlessness of youth  
Be some excuse ? Pray you remember, sir,  
How on a sudden you yourself determin'd

To leave the cheerful city and come here,  
Among dull woods and fields, and savage people ;  
And surely 'twas no wonder that my brother  
Should, ill advis'd, no doubt, but naturally,  
Slip for a month back to the busy world  
To which his very dangers had endear'd him.  
And now to prove  
How much he feels your anger and his fault,  
Since his return he has lived quietly,  
I might say almost *eremitically*,  
Up in the mountain, yet more solitary  
And still than this is, doing penance there.  
Let me plead for him, sir ; let him come down,  
To kiss your hand and see you once again.

*Luis.* He should be grateful to you, Porcia—  
Well, let him come.

*Por.* Bless you for saying so !  
I'll go myself to him this evening,  
And tell him this good news.

*Luis.* Do so. Ah me !  
That all were settled thus ! Did I but know  
Where Juan is, and where his enemy ! *[Exit.*

*Julia (entering).* Well, madam, you have gain'd  
your point.

*Por.* Yes, Julia,

*Two* points ; for, first, my brother will come back ;  
And, secondly, so doing, leave the old castle  
At my disposal, where the Prince and I  
May meet together in security.

I'll write to Alvaro now, and do you tell  
The messenger who brought his letter hither,  
I'll go this evening up the mountain. So  
Belardo, the old porter,  
Who knows and loves me well, will look for me,  
And understand the purpose of my going.

*Julia.* Ah, now I see, beside his bow and arrows,  
Love 'arms himself with trick and stratagem.

*Por.* And something else ; give me my Arquebuss ;  
So, Love and I perchance, as says the song,  
May hit a hart as we shall go along.

SCENE II. *A room in DON LUIS' castle in the hills.—*

*Enter ALVARO and FABIO.*

*Alv.* How is't with Serafina ?

*Fab.* Nay, you know.

Ever the same.

*Alv.* You mean still weeping ?

*Fab.* Ay.

*Alv.* Yes, from the hour when, fainting in my arms,

She pass'd from raging flame to the wild seas,  
And opening those heavenly eyes again,  
Still with the hue of death upon her cheek,  
She saw herself in my ship—in my power,—  
She has not ceas'd to weep ; all my caresses  
Unable to console her.  
I fondly hoped that she—

*Enter SERAFINA.*

*Ser.* Good Fabio, [*Exit FABIO.*  
Leave us awhile. "You fondly hoped," Alvaro—  
So much I heard, connected with my name ;  
And I perhaps have something on that text  
Would clear the matter up to both of us.  
"You fondly hoped"—was't not that I might be  
So frail, so lost to shame, and so inconstant,  
That for the loss of husband, home, and honour,  
Lost in one day, I might console myself  
With being in his arms, who robb'd me of all !  
Was't this you hoped ?

*Alv.* No, Serafina, but—

*Ser.* But what ?

*Alv.* And yet perhaps 'twas that I hop'd—  
The very desperation of my act  
Bringing its pardon with it, soon or late,



Seeing, the very element of love  
Is rashness, that he finds his best excuse  
In having none at all. Ah, Serafina,  
How greatly must he love, who all for love  
Perils the hope of being loved at all !

*Ser.* Poor argument ! I rather draw that he  
Who ventures on such desperate acts can have  
No true respect for her he outrages,  
And therefore no true love. No, daring traitor—  
But I'll not strive to break the heart of flint,  
But wear it with my tears. Hear me, Alvaro,  
In pity,—in mercy—hear me.  
This thing is done, there is no remedy,  
Let us not waste the time in arguing  
What better had been done ; the stars so rul'd it—  
Yea, providence that rules the stars. Well then,  
What next ? Alvaro, I would speak of this ;  
And if't be right I owe you any thing,  
Be it for this one boon, a patient hearing.  
Listen to me—

I never draw a breath but 'tis on fire  
With Juan's vengeance ; never move a step  
But think I see his fierce eyes glaring at me  
From some dark corner of this desolate house  
In which my youth is buried. And what gain *you*

By all this crime and misery ? My 'body,  
But not my soul ; without possessing which,  
Beauty itself is but a breathing corpse,  
But a cold marble statue, unsuffus'd  
With the responsive hue of sympathy,  
Possess'd, but not enjoy'd.  
Oh, ill betide that villain love, not love,  
That all its object and affection finds  
In the mere contact of encircling arms !  
But if this move you not—consider, Alvaro—  
Don Juan is a nobleman—as such  
Bound to avenge his honour ; he must know  
'Twas you who did this monstrous act, for Flora  
Would tell him all. There is one remedy :  
'Tis this, that you, despairing of my love,  
Which you can never gain—forego me quite,  
And give me up to some cold convent's cloister,  
Where buried I may wear away—

*Alv.* No more,  
Rather than give you up again, Serafina,  
Pray heaven's thunder— *(Shot within.)*

*Ser.* Again, this dreadful omen !  
'Tis for any death !

*Alv.* Fear not—Belardo ! ho !  
What shot was that ?

*Enter BELARDO.*

*Bel.* Your sister Porcia  
Is coming up the mountain ; nay, is now  
At the very gate.

*Ser.* O, whither must I go !

*Alv.* Belardo, lead her hence.

*Bel.* Not that way, sir,  
By which your sister enters.

*Alv.* In here then.  
I'll go and meet Porcia.

*Ser.* Mercy, heaven !

*[She goes in at one door, as PORCIA enters by another.]*

*Alv.* How now, Porcia, you look pleased to-day !

*Por.* And well I may—for two reasons, Alvaro.

*Alv.* Well, what are they ?

*Por.* First, I have got my father to relax in his  
humour against you.

*Alv.* My good sister !

*Por.* So as he will see you at Bellaflor this very  
evening.

*Alv.* Good ! and your second reason ?

*Por.* That coming up the pass, I made the crown-  
ing shot of my life with this arquebuss—a hare at  
full speed—flying, I might say.

*Alv.* Give you joy of both your hits, Porcia.

*Por.* I am so proud of the last (though glad of the first, Alvaro) that I shall try my luck and skill a little longer about the castle this evening.

*Alv.* So—

*Por.* You will not wait for me, but go down at once to Bellaflor, and show my father you value his forgiveness by your haste to acknowledge it.

*Alv.* You say well ; but you will go with me ?

*Por.* Fear not, I shall soon be after you.

*Alv.* Well, if so, then—(*apart to BELARDO,*) Belardo, remember you get the lady to her room directly my sister is gone out.

*Por.* Our roads lie together as far as the gate at least. (*Aside to BELARDO.*) If the Prince happen to come hither, tell him to wait for me, Belardo ; I shall be back directly. Come, brother.

[*Exeunt ALVARO and PORCIA.*]

*Bel.* They say a Pander is a good business ; and yet here am I ministering both to brother and sister with very little profit at the year's end.

*Ser.* (*entering cautiously.*) Porcia's gone ?

*Bel.* • Yes, she is gone.

*Ser.* Had she resolved on going into the room where I was she could have done it ; there was

neither key nor bolt within. But she is gone and I can get to my own.

*Bel.* No.

*Ser.* Belardo ! why ?

*Bel.* Some one coming.

*Ser.* Again ! *[She hides as before.]*

*Enter PRINCE.*

*Prince.* How now, Belardo, where is your mistress ? she advised me her brother would be away, and she here this evening.

*Bel.* Your Highness comes in good time. She went with him, but will be back directly. She is here.

*Enter PORCIA.*

*Por.* Not far behind, you see. Scarce had he taken the turn to Bellaflor, when I turn'd back.

*Prince.* How shall I thank you for this favour ?

*Por.* My brother's living here has been the reason of our not meeting before : but that is remedied for the future.

*Prince.* And how ?

*Por.* He is at last reconciled to my father, and is even now gone home, to Bellaflor.

*Prince (aside).* My heart thanks you but little,

being away with another ; but if I cannot avenge memory, I will thus try and deceive or amuse it.  
My lovely Porcia !

*Bel. (aside).* She hears every word they say !

*Por.* Ah, you flatter still.

*Prince.* Flatter !

*Por.* Do I not know there is a Siren at Naples—

*Prince.* Porcia, to prove to you how unfounded that suspicion is, I have these many days wholly quitted Naples, and, out of a melancholy that has taken hold of me, now live retired in a little Villa hard by this : you may imagine at least one reason for my doing so. And so enchanted am I with my solitude, that till this evening (when you broke it as I could wish) I have not once stirred abroad ; my only occupation being to watch some pictures that I am having done, by the best masters of Italy and of Spain too ; one of which country I have happen'd on, who might compete with Apelles. As I told you, I have spent whole days in watching them at work.

*Por.* My jealousy whispered—

*Enter BELARDO.*

*Bel.* Unlucky to be sure.

*Por.* What now ?

*Bel.* What can make your brother return so suddenly ?

*Por.* My brother !

*Bel.* He is now at the gate.

*Por.* He must suspect the Prince ! O, my lord, hide yourself.

*Prince.* Where ?

*Por.* Any where !—quick ! here.

[*She puts him where SERAFINA is.*]

*Prince.* For your sake, Porcia.

*Enter ALVARO.*

*Alv.* I cannot be easy till I am assured that Serafina—— Porcia here ?

*Por.* Alvaro !

*Alv.* You left me on a sudden ?

*Por.* I was tired, and came back for rest.

*Alv.* So—

*Por.* But you ?

*Alv.* I bethought me that, considering my father's late indisposition toward me, it were better you were at my side when I went to him.

*Por.* So—

*Alv.* So that if he should relapse into ill-humour, you know how to direct him.

*Por.* Well, shall we start again together ?

*Alv.* Is not that best ?

*Por.* As you please.

*Alv. (aside).* She will not then stumble on Serafina.

*Por. (aside).* I shall so get him out of the Prince's way.

[*Exeunt PORCIA and ALVARO.*

*Bel.* Now then the two imprison'd ones get out.

*Enter the PRINCE, and SERAFINA, her hand before her face.*

*Ser.* In vain—you shall not know me.

*Prince.* Nay, in vain

You try to be unknown.

*Ser.* Consider—

*Prince.* Nay,

Down with that little hand, too small a cloud

To hide the heaven of your beauty from me.

Lady, I know you—but one such. And know

That love himself has wrought a miracle,

To this unlikeliest place, by means unlikeliest,

Bringing us here together.

*Bel.* Only this was wanting to the plot ! The sister's gallant in love with the brother's mistress !



*Ser.* Generous Orsino ! if I try in vain  
To hide me from you—wretched that I am  
To have to hide at all—but the less wretched  
Being unmaskt by your nobility—  
I ask this mercy at your feet ; betray not  
The secret chance has now betray'd to you.  
I am a wretched woman, you a Prince.  
Grant me this boon ; and yet one more, to leave me  
To weep my miseries in solitude.

*Prince.* Madam, your prayer is not in vain. Your  
name,  
Upon the word and honour of a Prince,  
Shall never pass my lips.  
And for that second wish, hardest of all,  
I yet will pay for one delicious glance  
The greatest price I can, by leaving you.  
Farewell—you owe me more anxiety  
Than you believe.

*Ser.* I shall not be asham'd  
To own the debt, though hopeless to repay it.  
But heav'n shall do that for me. Farewell, my lord.

*Prince.* Farewell. [*Exeunt PRINCE and SERAFINA.*]

*Bel.* I wonder if they know the ancient ling,  
“ I'll keep your secret, only you keep mine.”

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *The PRINCE'S Villa.—Enter DON JUAN in poor apparel; and CELIO.*

*Cel.* Your business with the Prince, sir ?

*Juan.* Only to speak  
About a picture I have finish'd for him.

*Cel.* He is not here at present ; not, I think,  
Return'd from hunting.

*Juan.* Will he soon be home ?

*Cel.* I cannot speak to that, sir. [*Exit CELIO.*

*Juan.* Why, what a fate is mine !  
All of a sudden—but I dare not say it ;  
Scarce could I of myself believe it, if  
I told it to myself ; so with some things  
'Tis easier to bear, than hear of them ;  
And how much happens daily in this strange world,  
Far easier to be done than be believed.  
Who could have thought that I, being what I was  
A few days back, am what I am ; to this  
Reduc'd by that name *Honour* ; whose nice laws,  
Accurst be he who framed !  
Little he knew the essence of the thing  
He legislated for, who put my honour  
Into another's hand ; made my free right  
Another's slave, for others to abuse,

And then myself before the world arraign'd,  
To answer for a crime against myself !  
And one being vain enough to make the law,  
How came the silly world to follow it,  
Like sheep to their own slaughter ! And in all  
This silly world is there a greater victim  
To its accursed custom than myself !

*Enter LEONELO, poorly drest.*

*Leon.* Yes, one,  
Who follows your misfortunes, and picks up  
The crumbs of misery that fall from you ;  
My chief subsistence now.

*Juan.* And I have left  
Country and home to chase this enemy,  
Of whom as yet no vestige—

*Leon.* And no wonder,  
Seeing he travels with you.

*Juan.* In these rags—

*Leon.* And very hungry ; and so we come at last  
To Naples ; for what purpose ?

*Juan.* Why, if't be  
Some former lover ; would he not return  
To his own country, and hers ?

*Leon.* In which meanwhile

We starve, without a stiver in our pockets,  
While friends swarm round us, if you would, my lord,  
Reveal yourself.

*Juan.* Shorn of my honour? No!

*Leon.* And I, not being shorn of appetite,  
Would publish my disgraceful want of food  
'To all the world. There is Don Luis now,  
Your ancient friend.

*Juan.* What friend but, if he be  
True to himself and me, must be my enemy,  
And either wholly turn his face away,  
Or look at me with pity and contempt?  
I will reveal myself to no one, nay,  
Reveal *myself* I cannot,—not myself  
Until I be aveng'd.

*Leon.* And so you make  
The painter's trade your stalking-horse,  
To track your enemy, and in these rags  
Come to the Prince.

*Juan.* Oh let me die in rags,  
Rather than he should recognise me! Once  
He saw me—

*Leon.* O my lord, fear not for that;  
Hunger, and rags, and sleeplessness, and anguish,  
Have chang'd you so your oldest friend would pass you.

*Juan.* They have that merit then. But see—the Prince.

*Enter PRINCE.*

I kiss your Highness' hand.

*Prince.* Well, Spaniard,  
What would you with me ?

*Juan.* I waited on your Highness,  
To tell you of a picture I had finisht.  
Thinking your Grace might like—

*Prince.* I thank you, sir,  
What is the subject ?

*Juan.* Hercules, my lord ;  
Wherein (unless I do deceive myself)  
I think the fair and terrible are join'd  
With some success.

*Prince.* As how ?

*Juan.* As thus, my lord.  
The point I have chosen in that history  
Is where the faithless Centaur carries off  
Deijanira, while beyond the river  
Stands Hercules with such a face and gesture  
As not a man, I think, who looks on it,  
But would exclaim, " Jealousy and Revenge ! "

*Prince.* I long to see it.

*Juan.* That is the main group ;  
But far away, among the tangled thicks  
Of a dark mountain gap, this Hercules  
Fires his own funeral pile to the smoky clouds.  
And I would have this motto for the whole,  
“ So Jealousy in its own flames expires.”

*Prince.* Not only do I like the subject well,  
But now especially, being deeply scorcht,  
Not with the flame that burn'd up Hercules,  
But that for which the unlucky Centaur died.

*Juan.* Indeed, my lord.

*Prince.* Indeed—and, having done  
This picture for me, you shall set about  
One other.

*Juan.* At your pleasure.

*Prince.* You shall know then,  
That of a certain lady whom but once  
I saw, and for a moment, I became  
Infatuated so, her memory  
Every where and for ever, day and night,  
Pursues me. Hopeless of obtaining her,  
And ev'n of ever seeing her again,  
Chance has discover'd to me where she lives  
Conceal'd—I know not why, but so it is—  
And 'twould at least console my hopeless love,

To have her picture. You are a foreigner  
Who know not nor are known by any here,  
So I can better trust you with a secret  
I dare not even to herself reveal.

*Juan.* I'll do my best to serve you ; but I fear,  
If she be such a creature as you say,  
'That I shall fail to satisfy myself  
Or you.

*Prince.* Why so ?

*Juan.* I tried at such a face  
Once.

*Prince.* Nay, I know that beauty's subtlest essence  
Is most impossible to seize. But yet  
I shall commit this business to your hands  
Most confidently.

*Juan.* I'll do my best.

*Prince.* Come then,  
Remembering this business must be done  
With all despatch and secrecy. Yourself  
Must not be seen by her, nor I, who know not  
(I told you) how or why she should be there ;  
But my authority, and a little gold,  
(At least, I hope,) shall set the door ajar,  
That you may catch a sight of her. Myself  
Will be at hand, and ready to protect you

Against all danger.

*Juan.* I will trust your Highness,  
And also (let me say so) trust myself,  
Although but a poor painter.

*Prince.* I believe it ;  
And each of us shall play his part, I think,  
That neither shall depart unsatisfied. [*Exit PRINCE.*

*Juan.* Perhaps, but not as you suppose. Leonelo,  
Put up my brushes and my colours, and—  
My pistols with them.

*Leon.* Pistols ! Is't to paint  
In body colour ?

*Juan.* Put them up.

*Leon.* And whither  
Are we to carry them ?

*Juan.* I do not know.  
Whither the Prince shall carry me, I go. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *A room in DON LUIS' Villa.—Enter LUIS  
and ALVARO.*

*Alv.* Now, sir, that (thanks to Porcia) you have  
open'd  
Your arms to me once more, I cannot rest  
(So favour ever calls for favour) till



You tell me what the inward trouble is  
That mars your outward feature. I was cause  
Of so much trouble to you, that I dread  
Lest of this also, which with troubled looks  
You still keep speaking to yourself apart,  
Like people in a play.

*Luis.* Alvaro, no.

Thank God, this trouble lies not at your door.  
Let that suffice.

*Alv.* You will not trust me, sir ?

*Luis.* Why will you press me ? since you must  
be told,

It is about my friend—Don Juan Roca.

*Alv.* Don Juan !

*Luis.* Yes, Don Juan.

*Alv.* What of him ?  
(I'll drink the cup at once !) (*aside*).

*Luis.* What evil star  
Made him my friend !

*Alv.* Too true ! (*aside*). But what has happen'd ?

*Luis.* Why will you know ? and should I dare to  
tell

My friend's dishonour ? Well, no more than this—  
Some wretch—some villain—some accursed—but  
Be there bad name enough to brand him by,

I have not breath for it—nor is it well  
For you or for myself—has ravisht from him  
His wife, his Serafina.

And I, O God ! not able to avenge him !

*Alv.* (*aside*). Does he know all ? and knowing  
whose the crime,

Cannot, he says, avenge it on his son ?  
Shall I then tell, and gain at least the grace  
Of a confession ? Hear me, sir.

*Luis.* Nay, nay,  
I know what you would say, how vain it is  
To vex myself who cannot help my friend—  
We neither knowing who the villain is,  
Nor whither both are fled : heaven ! if we did,  
I should not now be idly moaning here.

*Alv.* All's safe ! (*aside*). Nor I, sir ; give me  
but a clue,  
(Not only for Don Juan's sake, but yours,)  
I'll track the villain through the world.

*Luis.* Alvaro,  
Your words are music to me.

*Alv.* Still, my father,  
I will say what to say you said was vain.  
Until some clue be found, let not this grief  
Consume you so.

*Luis.* Such wounds are hard to heal.  
Yet, quicken'd by your courage, and to show  
How well I like your counsel—come, Alvaro,  
I will with you to your hill castle there ;  
That which has been your banishment so long,  
Shall witness now our reconciliation.  
We'll go this evening—now—together.

*Alv.* Good, sir.

But pardon me, let me go on before  
To apprise Belardo of your going thither—  
And also Serafina ! (*apart*). [Exit.

*Luis.* Be it so !

*Julia (entering).* My lord, Don Pedro is without,  
and fain

Would speak to you.

*Luis.* Admit him, Julia.  
The wound re-opens—Serafina's father !  
No doubt upon what errand.

*Enter DON PEDRO.*

*Ped.* Ah, Don Luis,  
Your arms ! (*They embrace.*)

*Luis.* Don Pedro, I must surely thank  
The cause to which my poor retirement owes  
This honour.

*Ped.* Yet a thankless cause, Don Luis.

These many days I have heard nothing of  
Don Juan and my daughter ; they neither write  
Themselves, nor any one to whom I write  
To ask about them answers to the purpose.  
What may this mean ? I have come hither thinking  
That you, who are the model of all friends,  
May deal more clearly with me. You may think  
What I endure from this suspense. In mercy  
Relieve me from it quickly.

*Luis (aside).* Poor old man ;

What shall I say ? tell his grey hairs at once  
The ruin of his honour and his love ?

*Ped.* You pause, my lord !

*Luis.* And yet I need not wonder,  
I nothing hear of them if you do not.

*Ped.* And you know nothing of them ?

*Enter PORCIA hurriedly.*

*Por.* Sir, I hear

You are going (are you not ?) this evening  
To the castle, with my brother.  
But who is this ?

*Ped.* Ever your slave, sweet lady.

*Por.* Oh, pardon me, my lord.

*Luis.* Nay, pardon *me*  
That I cut short your compliments, Porcia.

(This interruption, come so opportune,  
Shall carry what ill news I have to tell  
Into the open air at least.) Don Pedro,  
I am going to the mountain, as she says ;  
You to the city ; for some way at least  
Our roads are one, and I would talk with you  
About this business without interruption.  
Will't please you come ?

*Ped.* Your pleasure's mine. Adieu,  
Fair lady.

*Por.* Farewell, sir.

*Luis.* Porcia, you  
Will follow in the carriage. [*Exeunt LUIS and PEDRO.*]

*Por.* And should go  
More gladly, were my lover there to meet me. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. *The garden under ALVARO's castle.—A large  
grated door in the centre.—Enter PRINCE, JUAN,  
LEONELO, and BELARDO.*

*Prince (to BELARDO).* You know your office ; take  
this diamond by way of thanks.

*Bel.* I know little of diamonds but that they sell  
for less than you give for them. But this [*to JUAN*]  
is to be your post.

*Juan.* I am ready.

*Prince.* Remember, Spaniard, it is for *me* you run this hazard, if there be any ; I shall be close at hand to protect you. Be not frightened.

*Juan.* Your Highness does not know me : were it otherwise, danger cannot well appal him whom sorrows like mine have left alive.

*Bel.* And, another time—dobloons, not diamonds.

[*Excunt PRINCE and LEONELO.*

Here she mostly comes of an evening, poor lady, to soothe herself, walking and sitting here by the hour together. This is where you are to be. Go in ; and mind you make no noise.

[*Puts JUAN into the grated door, and locks it.*

*Juan* (*through the grated window*). But what are you about ?

*Bel.* Locking the door to make all sure.

*Juan.* But had it not better be unlockt in case—

*Bel.* Hush ! she comes.

*Juan.* My palette then.

*Enter SERAFINA.*

*Ser.* • How often and how often do I draw  
My resolution out upon one side,  
And all my armed sorrows on the other,

To fight the self-same battle o'er again !

*Juan.* He stands in the way ; I cannot see her face.

*Bel.* Still weeping, madam ?

*Ser.* Wonder not, Belardo :

The only balm I have. You pity me :

Leave me alone then for a while, Belardo ;

The breeze that creeps along the whispering trees

Makes me feel drowsy.

*Juan (to BELARDO, whispering).* She turns her head  
away,

I cannot see her still.

*Ser.* What noise was that ?

*Bel.* Madam ?

*Ser.* I thought I heard a whisper.

*Bel.* Only

The breeze, I think. If you would turn this way,

I think 'twould blow upon you cooler.

*Ser.* Perhaps it will.

Thank you. I am very miserable and very weary.

*Bel.* She sleeps : that is the lady.

Make most of time. *[Exit.*

*Juan.* Yes. Now then for my pencil.

Serafina ! found at last ! Whose place is this ?

The Prince ? no ! But the stray'd lamb being here,

The wolf is not far off. She sleeps ! I thought

The guilty never slept : and look, some tears  
Still lingering on the white rose of her cheek.  
Be those the drops, I wonder,  
Of guilty anguish, or of chaste despair ?  
This death-like image is the sculptor's task,  
Not mine.

Or is it I who sleep, and dream all this,  
And dream beside, that once before I tried  
To paint that face—the daylight drawing in  
As now—and when somehow the lamp was out,  
A man—I fail'd : and what love fail'd to do,  
Shall hate accomplish ? She said then, if ever  
She suffer'd me to draw her face again,  
Might she die for it. Into its inmost depth  
Heav'n drew that idle word, and it returns  
In thunder.

*Ser. (dreaming).* Juan! Husband ! on my knees.  
Oh Juan—slay me not !

*Enter ALVARO ; she wakes and rushes to him.*

Alvaro,  
Save me, oh save me from him !

*Alv.* So the wretch  
Thrives by another's wretchedness. My love !

*Juan.* Alvaro, by the heavens !



*Alv.* Calm yourself ;  
You must withdraw awhile. Come in with me.

*Juan.* Villain !

*Ser.* (*clinging to ALVARO*). What's that ?

*Juan* (*shaking at the door*). The door is fast ;  
Open it, I say !—

Then die—thou and thy paramour !

[*Shoots a pistol at each through the grating.—Both fall :  
SERAFINA into the arms of BELARDO, who has come  
in during the noise.—Then directly enter DON LUIS,  
PEDRO, PORCIA.*

*Luis.* What noise is this ?

*Ser.* My father !—in your arms  
To die ;—not by your hand—Forgive me—Oh !

[*Dies.*

*Ped.* (*taking her in his arms*). My Serafina !

*Luis.* And Alvaro !

*Alv.* Ay,  
But do not curse me now !

[*Dies.*

*Enter the PRINCE and LEONELO.*

*Leon.* They must have found him out.

*Prince.* Whoever dares  
Molest him, answers it to me. Open the door.  
But what is this ?

[*BELARDO unlocks the door.*

*Juan (coming out).* A picture—  
Done by the Painter of his own Dishonour  
In blood.

I am Don Juan Roca. Such revenge  
As each would have of me, now let him take,  
As far as one life holds. Don Pedro, who  
Gave me that lovely creature for a bride,  
And I return to him a bloody corpse ;  
Don Luis, who beholds his bosom's son  
Slain by his bosom friend ; and you, my lord,  
Who, for your favours, might expect a piece  
In some far other style of art than this :  
Deal with me as you list ; 'twill be a mercy  
To swell this complement of death with mine ;  
For all I had to do is done, and life  
Is worse than nothing now.

*Prince.* Get you to horse,  
And leave the wind behind you.

*Luis.* Nay, my lord,  
Whom should he fly from ? not from me at least,  
Who lov'd his honour as my own, and would  
Myself have help'd him in a just revenge,  
Ev'n on an only son.

*Ped.* I cannot speak,  
But I bow down these miserable gray hairs

# 106 THE PAINTER OF HIS OWN DISHONOUR

To other arbitration than the sword ;  
Ev'n to your Highness' justice.

*Prince.*

Be it so.

Meanwhile—

*Juan.* Meanwhile, my lord, let me depart ;  
Free, if you will, or not. But let me go,  
Nor wound these fathers with the sight of one  
Who has cut off the blossom of their age :  
Yea, and his own, more miserable than all.  
They know me ; that I am a gentleman,  
Not cruel, nor without what seem'd due cause  
Put on this bloody business of my honour ;  
Which having done, I will be answerable  
Here and elsewhere, to all for all.

*Prince.*

Depart

In peace.

*Juan.* In peace ! Come, Leoneo.

[*He goes out slowly, followed by LEONELO : and the  
curtain falls.*]

---

Some alterations of this play were made with a view to the English stage, where, spite of the slightness of many parts, I still think it might be tried.

Its companion play, the *Medico de su Honra*, is far more famous ; has some more terrible, perhaps some finer, situations ; but inferior, I think, in variety of scene, character, and incident.

It may add a little to the reader's interest, as it did to mine, to learn from Mr. Ticknor, that Calderon wrote a "*Tratado defendiendo la nobleza de la Pintura.*"

**KEEP YOUR OWN SECRET**

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

ALEXANDER,	<i>Prince of Parma.</i>
NISIDA,	<i>his Sister.</i>
DON CESAR,	<i>his Secretary.</i>
DON ARIAS, }	<i>Gentlemen of the Court.</i>
DON FELIX, }	
DONNA ANNA,	<i>Sister to Don Felix.</i>
ELVIRA,	<i>her Maid.</i>
LAZARO,	<i>Don Cesar's Servant.</i>

# KEEP YOUR OWN SECRET

## ACT I

SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.—Enter the PRINCE  
ALEXANDER, and DON ARIAS.*

*PRINCE.* I saw her from her carriage, Arias,  
As from her East, alight, another sun  
New ris'n, or doubling him whose envious ray  
Scem'd, as I watch'd her down the corridor,  
To swoon about her as she mov'd along ;  
Until, descending tow'rd my sister's room,  
She set, and left me hesitating like  
Some traveller who with the setting sun  
Doth fear to lose his way ; her image still,  
Lost from without, dazzling my inner eye—  
Can this be love, Don Arias ? if not,  
What is it ? something much akin to love.

*Ar.* But had you not, my lord, often before  
Seen Donna Anna ?

*Prince.*                      Often.

*Ar.*                                      Yet till now

Never thus smitten ! how comes that, my lord ?

*Prince.* Well askt—though ignorantly. Know  
you not

That not an atom in the universe  
Moves without some particular impulse  
Of heaven ? What yesterday I might abhor,  
To-day I may delight in : what to-day  
Delight in, may as much to-morrow hate.  
All changes ; 'tis the element the world,  
And we who live there, move in. Thus with me ;  
This lady I have often seen before,  
And, as you say, was ne'er a sigh the worse,  
Until to-day ; when, whether she more fair,  
Or I less blind, I know not—only know  
'That she has slain me ; though to you alone  
Of all my friends I would my passion own.

*Ar.* Much thanks ; yet I must wonder, good my  
lord,

First, that in all your commerce with Don Cupid  
You never, I think, dealt seriously till now.

*Prince.* Perhaps : but if Don Cupid, Arias,  
Never yet tempted me with such an offer ?  
Besides, men alter ; princes who are born

To greater things than love, nevertheless  
May at his feet their sovereignty lay down  
Once in their lives ; as said the ancient sage—  
“He were a fool who had not done so once,  
Though he who does so twice is twice a fool.”

*Ar.* So much for that. My second wonder is,  
That you commit this secret to *my* keeping ;  
An honour that, surpassing my desert,  
Yea, and ambition, frights me. Good my lord,  
Your secretary, Don Cesar,—  
To whom you almost trust the government  
Of your dominions,—whom you wholly love,  
I also love, and would not steal from him  
A confidence that is by right his own ;  
Call him, my lord : into his trusty heart  
Pour out your own ; let not my loyalty  
To you endanger what I owe to him ;  
For if you lay't on me—

*Prince.* Don Arias,  
I love Don Cesar with as whole a heart  
As ever. He and I from infancy  
Have grown together ; as one single soul  
Our joys and sorrows shar'd ; till finding him  
So wise and true, as to another self  
Myself, and my dominion to boot,



I did intrust : you are his friend, and surely  
In honouring you I honour him as well.  
Besides, Arias, I know not how it is,  
For some while past a change has come on him ;  
I know not what the cause : he is grown sad,  
Neglects his business—if I call to him,  
He hears me not, or answers from the purpose,  
Or in mid answer stops. And, by the way,  
We being on this subject, I would fain,  
Being so much his friend, for both our sakes,  
You would find out what ails and occupies him ;  
Tell him from me to use my power as ever,  
Absolute still : that, loving him so well,  
I'd know what makes him so unlike himself ;  
That, knowing what it is, I may at least,  
If not relieve his sorrow, share with him.

*Ar.* Oh, not unjustly do you bear the name  
Of Alexander, greater than the great  
In true deserts !

*Enter LAZARO (with a letter).*

*Laz.* Not here ? my usual luck ; had I bad news  
to tell my master, such as would earn me a broken  
head, I should find him fast enough ; but now when  
I have such a letter for him as must bring me a hand-

some largess, oh, to be sure he's no where to be found. But I'll find him if I go to—

*Prince.* How now? Who's there?

*Laz.* The Prince!—Mum! (*hides the letter and turns to go*).

*Prince.* Who is it, I say?

*Ar.* A servant, my lord, of Don Cesar's, looking for his master, I suppose.

*Prince.* Call him back; perhaps he can tell us something of his master's melancholy.

*Ar.* True, my lord. Lazaro!

*Laz.* Eh?

*Ar.* His Highness would speak with you.

*Prince.* Come hither, sir.

*Laz.* Oh, my lord, I do well enough here: if I were once to kiss your Highness' feet, I could not endure common shoe-leather for a month to come.

*Ar.* His humour must excuse him.

*Prince.* You are Don Cesar's servant, are you?

*Laz.* Yes, one of your trinity; so please you.

*Prince.* Of my trinity, how so?

*Laz.* As thus; your Highness is one with Don Cesar; I am one with him; ergo—

*Prince.* Well, you are a droll knave. But stop, stop: whither away so fast?

*Laz.* Oh, my lord, I am sure you will have none of so poor an article as myself, who am already the property of another too.

*Prince.* Nay, I like your humour, so it be in season. But there is a time for all things. I want you now to answer me seriously and not in jest : and tell me the secret of your master's melancholy, which I feel as my own. But perhaps he is foolish who looks for truth in the well of a jester's mouth.

*Laz.* But not so foolish as he who should throw it there. And therefore since my master is no fool, it is unlikely he should have committed his mystery to me. However, in my capacity of *Criado*, whose first commandment it is, "Thou shalt reveal thy master's weakness as thy own," I will tell you what I have gathered from stray sighs and interjections of his on the subject. There has lately come over from Spain a certain game of great fashion and credit called Ombre. This game Don Cesar learned ; and, playing at it one day, and happening to hold Basto, Malilla, Spadille, and Ace of Trumps in his hand, stood for the game ; and lost. On which he calls out "foul play," leaves the party, and goes home. Well, at night, I being fast asleep in my room, comes he to me in his shirt, wakes me up, and, dealing cards

as it were with his hands, says, "If I let this trick go, I am embeasted for that, and besides put the lead into the enemy's hand ; therefore I trump with one of my matadores, and then I have four hearts, of which the ten-ace *must* make, or else let them give me back my nine cards as I had them before discarding." And this I take it is the cause of his dejection.<sup>1</sup>

*Prince.* The folly of asking you has been properly chastised by the folly of your answer. You are right ; Don Cesar would never have intrusted with a grave secret one only fit for idle jest.

*Laz.* Ah, they are always importing some nonsense or other from Spain. God keep your Highness ; I will take warning not to intrude my folly upon you any more (until you try again to worm some truth out of me). *[Aside and exit.]*

*Prince.* A droll fellow ! Were one in the humour, he might amuse.

<sup>1</sup> I will not answer for the accuracy of my version of this dilemma at Ombre : neither perhaps could Lazaro for his : which, together with the indifference (I presume) of all present readers on the subject, has made me indifferent about it. Cesar, I see, starts with almost the same fine hand Belinda had, who also was

● *"Just in the jaws of ruin and Codille,"*

as he was, but, unlike him, saved by that unseen king of hearts that

*"Lurk'd in her band and mourn'd his captive queen."*

*Ar.* Oh, you will always find him in the same, whenever you are in the mood. He cannot be sad.

*Prince.* He cannot be very wise then.

*Ar.* He is as God made him. Did you never hear any of his stories ?

*Prince.* I think not.

*Ar.* He will hardly tell you one of himself that yet might amuse you. He was one day playing at dice with me ; lost all his money ; and at last pawned his very sword, which I would not return him, wishing to see how he got on without. What does he but finds him up an old hilt, and clapping on a piece of lath to that, sticks it in the scabbard. And so wears it now.

*Prince.* We will have some amusement of him by and by.

Alas ! in vain I hope with idle jest  
To cool the flame that rages in my breast.  
Go to Don Cesar : get him to reveal  
The sorrows that he feeling I too feel.  
I'll to my sister ; since, whether away,  
Or present, Donna Anna needs must slay,  
I will not starve with absence, but e'en die,  
Burn'd in the sovereign splendour of her eye.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II. *A Room in DON CESAR's House.—Enter  
DON CESAR and LAZARO meeting.*

*Laz.* A letter, sir, Elvira just gave me.

*Ces.* A letter ! Give it me. How long have you had it ?

*Laz.* I looked for you first at the Prince's.

*Ces.* Where I was not ?

*Laz.* You know it ! I am always looking for what cannot be found in time. But if you like the letter I shall claim my largess for all that.

*Ces.* Ah ! what does she say ?

*Laz.* The folly, now, of a man with his watch in his hand asking other people for the time of day !

*Ces.* My heart fails me. Even if your news be good it comes late. [*He reads the letter.*]

*Laz.* So let my reward then—only let it come at last.

*Ces.* O Lazaro, half drunk with my success,  
I lose my wits when most I've need of them.  
She writes to me, my lady writes to me  
So sweetly, yea, so lovingly ;  
Methinks I want to tear my bosom open,  
And lay this darling letter on my heart.  
Where shall I shrine it ?

*Ar.* The Prince, our common Lord,  
Who much perplex and troubled too, Don Çesar,  
About the melancholy that of late  
(No need say more of that which best you know)

Has clouded over you, has askt of me  
Whom he will have to be your bosom friend,  
The cause of it.—Alas, 'tis very plain  
I am not what he thinks.—Well, I am come,  
Say not as friend, but simple messenger,  
To ask it of yourself.

*Ces.*                    You do yourself  
And me wrong, Arias ; perchance the Prince—  
But yet say on.

*Ar.*                    His Highness bids me say  
'Tis if your sadness rise from any sense  
Of straiten'd power, whatever residue  
Of princely rule he hitherto reserved,  
He gives into your hands ; as sov'reign lord  
To govern his dominions as your own.  
Thus far his highness. For myself, Don Cesar,  
Having no other realm to lord you of  
'Than a true heart, I'd have you think betimes,  
'That, deep as you are rooted in his love,  
Nay, may be all the more for that, he feels  
Your distaste to his service, and himself :  
I'd have you think that all a subject's merits,  
However highly heap'd, however long,  
Still are but heaps of sand, that some new tide  
Of royal favour may wash clean away,



One little error cancelling perhaps  
The whole account of life-long services.  
Be warn'd by me ; clear up your heavy brow,  
And meet his kind looks with a look as kind,  
Whatever cloud be on the heart within :  
If not your friend, Don Cesar, as your servant  
Let me implore you.

*Ces.* Oh, Don Arias,  
I kiss his Highness' feet, and your kind hands  
That bring his favours to me : and to each  
Will answer separately. First, to him ;—  
Tell him I daily pray that Heav'n so keep  
His life, that Time, on which his years are strung,  
Forget the running count ; and, secondly,  
Assure him, Arias, the melancholy  
He speaks of not a jot abates my love  
Of him, nor my alacrity in his service ;  
Nay, that 'tis nothing but a little cloud  
In which my books have wrapt me so of late  
That, duty done, I scarce had time or spirit  
Left to enjoy his gracious company :  
Perhaps too, lest he surfeit of my love,  
I might desire by timely abstinence  
To whet his liking to a newer edge.  
Thus much for him. For you, Don Arias,

Whose equal friendship claims to be repaid  
In other coin, I will reveal to you  
A secret scarcely to myself confess,  
Which yet scarce needs your thanks, come at a  
moment

When my brimm'd heart had overflow'd in words,  
Whether I would or no. Oh, Arias,  
Wonder not then to see me in a moment  
Flying from melancholy to mere joy,  
Between whose poles he ever oscillates,  
Whose heart is set in the same sphere with mine :  
Which saying, all is said. I love, my friend ;  
How deeply, let this very reticence,  
That dare not tell what most I feel, declare.  
Yes, I have fixt my eyes upon a star ;  
'Toward which to spread my wings ev'n against hope,  
Argues a kind of honour. I aspir'd,  
And (let not such a boast offend the ears,  
That of themselves have open'd to my story,)  
Not hopelessly : the heav'n to which I pray'd  
Answer'd in only listening to my vows ;  
Such daring not defeated not disdain'd.  
Two years I worshipp'd at a shrine of beauty,  
That modesty's cold hand kept stainless still ;  
Till wearied, if not mov'd by endless prayers,

She grants them ; yea, on this most blessed day,  
With this thrice blessed letter. You must see it,  
That your felicitations by rebound  
Double my own ; the first victorious trophy  
That proud ambition has so humbly won.

Oh Arias, 'tis much I have to tell,  
And tell you too at once ; being none of those  
Who overmuch entreaty make the price  
Of their unbosoming ; who would, if they knew  
In what the honour of their lady lies,  
Name her at once, or seal their lips for ever.

But you are trusty and discreet : to you  
I may cominit my heart ; beseeching you  
To keep this love-song to yourself alone,  
Assigning to the Prince, remember this,  
My books sole cause of my abstraction.

Donna Anna de Castelvì—

(I can go on more freely now the name  
Of her I worship bars my lips no more,)  
Is she who so divides me from myself,  
That what I say I scarcely know, although  
I say but what I feel : the melancholy  
You ask about, no gloomy sequestration  
Out of the common world into a darker,  
But into one a thousand times more bright ;

And let no man believe he truly loves,  
Who lives, or moves, or thinks, or hath his being  
In any other atmosphere than Love's,  
Who is our absolute master ; to recount  
The endless bead-roll of whose smiles and tears  
I'd have each sleepless night a century.  
Much have I said—have much more yet to say !  
But read her letter, Arias, the first seal  
Of my success, the final one, I think,  
Of my sure trust in you ; come, share with me  
My joy, my glory, my anxiety ;  
And above all things, once more, Arias,  
Down to your secret'st heart this secret slip ;  
For every secret hangs in greater fear  
Between the speaker's mouth and hearer's ear  
Than any peril between cup and lip.

*Ar.* You have good cause for joy.

*Ces.*

You will say so

When you have read the letter.

*Ar.*

You desire it. (*Reads.*)

“To confess that one is loved is to confess that one loves too ; for there is no woman but loves to be loved. But alas, there is yet more. If to cover my love I have pretended disdain, let the shame of now confessing it excuse me. Come to me this evening

and I will tell you what I can scarce understand myself. Adieu, my love, adieu ! ”

Your hands are full indeed of happy business.

*Ces.* Enough : you know what you shall tell the  
Prince

In my behalf : if he be satisfied  
I'll wait on him directly.

*Ar.* Trust to me.

*Ces.* Let my sighs help thee forward, O thou sun  
What of thy race in heaven remains to run :  
Oh do but think that Dafne in the west  
Awaits thee, and anticipate thy rest !

[*Exeunt CESAR and LAZARO.*

*Ar.* Charg'd with two secrets,  
One from my Prince the other from my friend,  
Each binding equally to silence, each  
Equally the other's revelation needing,  
How shall I act, luckless embosomer  
Of other's bosoms ! how decide between  
Loyalty and love with least expense to both !  
The Prince's love is but this morning's flower,  
As yet unsunn'd on by his lady's favour ;  
Cesar's of two years' growth, expanded now ,  
Into full blossom by her smiles and tears ;  
The Prince too loves him whom his lady loves,

And were he told, might uncontested leave  
The prize that one he loves already owns ;  
And so both reap the fruit, and make the excuse  
Of broken silence, if it needs must break.  
And yet I grope about, afraid to fall  
Where ill-advised good-will may ruin all. [Exit.

SCENE III. *A Corridor in the Palace.*—Enter PRINCE,  
DON FELIX, DONNA ANNA, and train.

*Prince.* I must show you the way.

*Anna.* Your Highness must not do yourself so  
great indignity.

*Prince.* To the bounds at least of my sister's  
territory.

*Anna.* Nay, my lord, that were undue courtesy.

*Prince.* What courtesy, madam, can be undue  
from any man to any lady ?

*Anna.* When that lady is your subject, whom your  
very condescension dazzles to her own discomfiture.

*Prince.* What, as the morning star dazzles the  
sun whom he precedes as petty harbinger ? If I  
obey you 'tis that I fear my own extinction in your  
rays. Adieu.

*Anna.* God keep your Highness. [Exit.

*Prince.* Don Felix, will you attend your sister ?

*Felix.* I only stay to thank your Highness, (both as subject and as servant,) for all the honour that you do us ; may Heaven so prolong your life that even oblivion herself—

*Prince.* Nay, truce to compliment : your sister will not of my company, unless under your proxy. So farewell. [*Exit FELIX.*] Is there a greater nuisance than to have such windy nonsense stuff'd into one's ears, when delight is vanished from the eyes !

*Enter ARIAS.*

But, Don Arias ! You have seen Cesar ?

*Ar.* Yes, my lord ; but ere I tell you about him, would know how far this last interview with Donna Anna has advanced your love.

*Prince.* Oh Arias, Arias, my love for her  
So blends with my solicitude for him,  
I scarce can hold me clear between the two.  
Yet let me tell you. In my sister's room,  
Whither I went, you know, upon our parting,  
I saw my lady like a sovereign rose  
Among the common flowers ; or, if you will,  
A star among the roses ; or the star

Of stars, the morning star : yea, say at once  
 The sun himself among the host of heaven !  
 My eyes and ears were rapt with her ; her lips  
 Not fairer than the words that came from them.  
 At length she rose to go : like the ev'ning star  
 Went with the ev'ning ; which, how short, say love  
 Who'd spin each golden moment to a year,  
 Which year would then seem than a moment less.

*Ar.* Is then, my lord, this passion so deep fixt ?

*Prince.* Nay, but of one day's growth—

*Ar.* I come in time then,

My lord, in one word, if you love Don Cesar,  
 Cease to love Donna Anna.

*Prince.* Arias,

He who begins to hint at any danger  
 Is bound to tell it out—nothing, or all.  
 Why do you hesitate ?

*Ar.* Because, my lord,  
 But hinting this to you, I break the seal  
 Of secrecy to him.

*Prince.* But it is broken ;  
 And so—

*Ar.* Oh, Cesar, pardon him who fails  
 His pledge to you to serve his Prince ! My lord,  
 The cloud you long have seen on Cesar's brow,



Is not, as he would have you think it, born  
Of bookish studies only, but a cloud,  
All bright within, though dark to all without,  
Of love for one he has for two long years  
Silently worshipt.

*Prince.* Donna Anna !

*Ar.* Ay.

*Prince.* Cesar loves Donna Anna ! be it so—  
I love him, as you say, and would forego  
Much for his sake. But tell me, Arias,  
Knows Anna of his passion ?

*Ar.* Yes, my lord,  
And answers it with hers.

*Prince.* Oh wretched fate !  
Desperate ere jealous—jealous ere in love !  
If Cesar but lov'd her, I could, methinks,  
Have pardon'd, even have advanc'd his suit  
By yielding up my own. But that *she* loves,  
Blows rivalry into full blaze again.  
And yet I will not be so poor a thing  
To whine for what is now beyond my reach,  
Nor must the princely blood of Parma  
Run jealous of a subject's happiness.  
They love each other then ?

*Ar.* I even now

Have seen a letter—

*Prince.* Well ?

*Ar.* That Donna Anna  
Has written him, and in such honey'd words—

*Prince.* Why, is it not enough to know she loves  
him ?

You told me so : my mind made up to that,  
Why should a foolish letter fright it back ?  
And yet—yet, what last spark of mortal love  
But must flame up before it dies for ever  
To learn but what that foolish letter said !  
Know you ?

*Ar.* I saw it.

*Prince.* You saw it ! and what said it ?

*Ar.* After a chaste confession of her love,  
Bidding him be to-night under her lattice.

*Prince.* Under her lattice, while his Prince is left  
Abroad ; they two to whisper love together,  
While he gnaws hopeless jealousy alone.  
But why, forsooth, am I to be the victim ?  
If I can quench my love for Cesar's sake,  
Why not he his for me ? Tell me, Don Arias,  
Does Cesar know my passion ?

*Ar.* • How should he,  
You having told the secret but to me ?

*Prince.* By the same means that I know his.

*Ar.* My lord,

My loyalty might well be spar'd that taunt.

*Prince.* Ah, Arias, pardon me, I am put out,  
But not with you, into whose faithful charge  
I vest my love and honour confidently.

Enough, in what I am about to do  
I mean no malice or ill play to Cesar :  
'Tis but an idle curiosity :

And surely 'tis but fair, that if his Prince  
Leave him the lists to triumph in at leisure,  
I may at least look on the game he wins.  
You shall keep close to him, and tell me all  
That passes between him and her I love.

*Ar.* But having taunted me with my first step  
In your behalf, my lord—

*Prince.* Nay, sir, my will

At once absolves and authorizes you,  
For what is told and what remains to tell.

*Ar.* But, sir—

*Prince.* No more—

*Ar.* I must obey your bidding,  
But yet—

*Prince.* I may divert my jealousy,  
If not avenge it.

*Ar.* Ah ! what straits do those  
Who cannot keep their counsel fall into !

*Prince.* All say so, and all blab, like me and you !  
Look where he comes ; let us retire awhile.

[*PRINCE and ARIAS retire.*]

*Enter CESAR and LAZARO.*

*Ces.* O Phœbus, swift across the skies  
Thy blazing carriage post away ;  
Oh, drag with thee benighted day,  
And let the dawning night arise !  
Another sun shall mount the throne  
When thou art sunk beneath the sea ;  
From whose effulgence, as thine own,  
The affrighted host of stars shall flee.

*Laz.* A pretty deal about your cares  
Does that same Phœbus care or know ;  
He has to mind his own affairs,  
Whether you shake your head or no.  
You talk of hastening on the day ?  
Why heaven's coachman is the Sun,  
Who can't be put out of his way  
For you, sir, or for any one.

*Ces.* The Prince ! and something in my bosom  
tells me

All is not well. My lord, though my repentance  
Does not, I trust, lag far behind my fault,  
I scarce had dar'd to approach your Highness' feet,  
Had not my friend, Don Arias, been before  
As harbinger of my apology.

*Prince.* Cesar, indeed Don Arias has told me  
The story of your sadness : and so well,  
I feel it, and excuse it, as my own ;  
From like experience. I do not resent,  
But would divert you from it. Books, my friend,  
'Truly are so seductive company,  
We are apt to sit too long and late with them,  
And drowse our minds in their society ;  
This must not be ; the cause of the disease  
Once known, the cure is easy ; if 'tis books  
Have hurt you, lay them by awhile, and try  
Other society—less learn'd perhaps,  
But cheerfuller—exchange the pent-up air  
Of a close study for the breathing world.  
Come, we'll begin to-night ;  
Visit in disguise (as I have wish'd to do)  
The city, its taverns, theatres, and streets,  
Where music, masque, and dancing may divert  
Your melancholy : what say you to this ?

*Ces.* Oh, my kind lord, whose single word of pardon

Has turn'd all leaden grief to golden joy,  
Made me another man, or, if you will,  
The better self I was—

*Prince.* Why this is well ;  
'To-night together then—

*Ces.* Yet pardon me.

*Prince.* How now ?

*Ces.* It almost would revive my pain  
That you should spend yourself upon a cure  
Your mere forgiveness has already wrought.  
Let this day's happiness suffice the day,  
And its night also : 'twill be doubly sweet,  
Unbought by your annoyance.

*Prince.* Nay, my Cesar,  
Fear not for that : after so long estrangement,  
My pain would be the losing sight of you  
On this first night of your recovery.  
Lazaro !

*Laz.* My lord ?

*Prince.* You too shall go with us.

*Laz.* And not a trustier shall your Highness find  
To guard your steps.

*Prince.* What ! you are valiant ?

*Laz.* As ever girded sword.

*Prince.* Your weapon good too ?



*Prince.*

A vow ?

*Laz.* Ay, register'd in heaven !

Never to draw this weapon from her sheath  
Except on mortal quarrel. If in such  
Your Highness' service challenge her, why, then  
She shall declare herself.

*Ces.*

I'm desperate !

But yet one effort more. My lord, you see  
(You cannot fail) how your mere word of grace  
Has of itself brighten'd me up again ;  
I do beseech you—

*Prince.*

Pardon me, my Cesar,

Rather I see the cloud that 'gins to break  
Is not entirely gone ; nay, will return  
If you be left alone—which must not be :  
If not for your sake, Cesar, yet for mine,  
Who feel for your disquiet as my own ;  
And since our hearts are knit so close together,  
Yours cannot suffer but mine straightway feels  
A common pain ; seek we a common cure.  
To-night I shall expect you. Until then,  
Farewell.

[*Exit.*

*Ces.*

Fortune ! to see a fair occasion  
So patiently pursued, so fairly won,  
Lost at the very moment of success !



O Lazaro—what will my lady say ?

*Laz.* That I can't guess.

*Ces.* What will she do ?

*Laz.* Oh that

Is answer'd far more easily. She'll stand  
All night beside the window to no purpose.

*Ces.* Why she must say my love was all pretence,  
And her offended dignity vindicate,  
Rejecting me for ever ! Misery !

*Laz.* Dear me, sir, what is now become of all  
About, "Thou dawning night, benighted day."  
"Thou coachman sun !" etceteretera ?

*Ces.* Wilt thou be ever fool ?

*Laz.* If thou be not,  
Listen—fools' bolts, they say, are quickly shot—  
Who secrets have and cannot hold 'em,  
Shall surely rue the day they told 'em.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Public Square in Parma.—Night.—Enter*  
*PRINCE, CESAR, FELIX, ARIAS, and LAZARO, disguised.*

*Ar.* A lovely night !

*Prince.* As Night we choose to call,

When Day's whole sun is but distributed  
Into ten thousand stars.

*Fel.*                                Beside the moon,  
Who lightly muffled like ourselves reveals  
Her trembling silver.

*Laz.* What ! by way, you mean,  
Of making up the account ?

*Ces. (aside).* To think, alas !  
The first sweet vintage of my love thus lost,  
And, as my lady must too surely think,  
By my forgetfulness. (*Aloud.*) My lord, indeed  
The night wears on. May not the chiller air  
That blows from the returning tide of day  
Affect you ?

*Prince.* Nay, my state forbidding me  
Much to be seen about the streets by day,  
The night must serve my purpose.

*Ces. (aside).* Patience then !  
And I must try and draw my thoughts from her  
I cannot reach. (*Aloud.*) How does the lady Flora  
Please you, my lord ?

*Prince.* The lady Flora ? Oh,  
What she of Milan ? Too far off, I think,  
For one's regards to reach.

*Laz,* Ah true, my lord ;



*Ces.* The old Roman law  
To all the ugly women us'd to assign  
The fortunes of the handsome, thinking those  
Sufficiently endow'd with their good looks.

*Laz.* Ah ! and there Laura lives, the lass who said  
She'd sell her house and buy a coach withal ;  
And when they ask'd her, where she'd live, quoth she,  
" Why, *in* my coach ! " " But when night comes,"  
say they,  
" Where then ? " — " Why in the coach-house to be  
sure ! " <sup>1</sup>

*Ces.* Indeed, indeed, my lord, the night wears on,  
And sure your sister lies awake foreboding  
Some danger to your person.  
Consider her anxiety !

*Prince (aside).* Nay, *yours*  
Lies nearer to my heart.

*Ces.* My lord ?

*Prince.* I said  
No matter for my sister, that was all ;  
She knows not I'm abroad.

<sup>1</sup> The ambition for a coach so frequently laughed at by Calderon, is said to be in full force now ; not for the novelty of the invention, then, nor perhaps the dignity, so much as for the real comfort of easy and sheltered carriage in such a climate.

**Ces.** My hope is gone !

*Laz.* There, yonder in that little house, there lives  
A girl with whom it were impossible  
To deal straightforwardly.

*Prince.* But why?

*Laz.* She's crooked.

Ar. And there a pretty girl enough, but guarded  
By an old dragon aunt.

*Laz.* O Lord, defend me  
From all old women !

*Prince.* How so, Lazaro ?

*Laz.* Oh, ever since the day I had to rue  
The conjurer's old woman.

*Prince.* Who was she?

*Laz.* Why, my lord, once upon a time  
I fell in love with one who would not have me  
Either for love or money : so at last  
I go to a certain witch—tell him my story :  
Whereon he bids me do this ; cut a lock  
From my love's head and bring it to him. Well,  
I watch'd my opportunity, and one day,  
When she was fast asleep, adroitly lopp'd  
A lovely forelock from what seem'd her hair,  
But was an hair-loom rather from her wig  
Descended from a head that once was young

As I thought her. For, giving it the witch,  
To work his charm with, in the dead of night,  
When I was waiting for my love to come,  
Into my bed-room the dead woman stalk'd  
To whom the lock of hair had once belong'd,  
And claim'd me for her own. O Lord, how soon  
"Sweetheart" and "Deary" chang'd to "Apage!"  
And flesh and blood to ice.

*Ces. (aside).* Alas! what boots it trying to forget  
That which the very effort makes remember?  
Ev'n now, ev'n now, methinks once more I see her  
Turn to the window, not expecting me,  
But to abjure all expectation,  
And, as she moves away, saying, (methinks  
I hear her,) "Cesar, come when come you may,  
You shall not find me here." "Nay, but my love,  
Anna! my lady! hear me!" Oh confusion,  
Did they observe?

*Prince (aside to Arias).* How ill, Don Arias,  
Poor Cesar hides his heart—

*Ar.* Ev'n now he tries  
The mask again.

*Prince.* Indeed I pity him,  
Losing one golden opportunity;  
But may not I be pitied too, who never

Shall have so much as one to lose ?

*Ar.*

Speak low ;

You know her brother's by.

*Prince.*

No matter ; true

Nobility is slowest to suspect.

*Musician (sings within).*

Ah happy bird, who can fly with the wind,  
Leaving all anguish of absence behind ;  
Like thee could I fly,  
Leaving others to sigh,  
The lover I sigh for how soon would I find !<sup>1</sup>

*Ces.* Not an ill voice !

*Fel.*

Nay, very good.

*Prince.*

How sweetly

Sweet words, sweet air, sweet voice, atone together !

Arias, might we not on this sweet singer

Try Lazaro's metal and mettle ? you shall see.

Lazaro !

*Laz.* My lord !

*Prince.*

I never go abroad

But this musician dogs me.

*Laz.*

Shall I tell him

Upon your Highness's request, politely,

To move away ?

<sup>1</sup> This little song is from the *Desdicha de la Voz*.

*Prince.* I doubt me, Lazaro,  
He will not go for that, he's obstinate.

*Laz.* How then, my lord ?

*Prince.* Go up and strike him with your sword.

*Laz.* But were it brave in me, back'd as I am,  
To draw my sword on one poor piping bird ?  
If I must do it, let me challenge him  
Alone to-morrow.

But let me warn him first.

*Prince.* Do as I bid you,  
Or I shall call you coward.

*Ces.* Lazaro,  
Obey his Highness.

*Laz.* O good providence,  
'Temper the wind to a shorn lamb !

*Musician (within).*

Ah happy bird, whom the wind and the rain,  
And snare of the fowler, beset but in vain ;  
Oh, had I thy wing,  
Leaving others to sing,  
How soon would I be with my lover again !

*Laz. (aloud within).* Pray God, poor man, if thou  
be innocent  
Of any ill intention in thy chirping,  
The blade I draw upon thee turn to wood !





SCENE II.—*The Garden of DONNA ANNA's House ;  
DONNA ANNA and ELVIRA at a window.—Dawn.*

*Elv.* Yet once more to the window ?

*Anna.*

Oh Elvira,

For the last time ! now undeceiv'd to know  
How much deceiv'd I was !

Alas, until I find myself despis'd,  
Methought I was desir'd, till hated, lov'd ;  
Was't not enough to know himself belov'd,  
Without insulting her who told him so !  
Was't not enough—

Oh wonder not, Elvira, at my passion ;  
Of all these men's enchantments, none more potent  
Than what might seem unlikeliest—their disdain.

*Elv.* Indeed you have good cause for anger,  
madam :

But yet one trial more.

*Anna.*

And to what end ?

I'll not play Tantalus again for him.

Oh shameful insult ! had I dream'd of it,  
Would I have written him so tenderly ?

Told my whole heart ?—But, once in love, what  
woman

Can trust herself, alas, with pen and ink ?



*Laz.* Yes, sir ; a woman : and when I say a woman,

I mean two women.

*Ces.* Oh see if it be she.

*Laz.* 'Twould make Elvira jealous, sir.

*Ces.* Oh lady,

Is it you ?

*Anna.* Yes I, Don Cesar : who all night  
Have waited on your pleasure, unsuspecting  
What now too well I know.  
My foolish passion, sir, is well reveng'd  
By shamed repentance. Oh, you come at last,  
Thinking belike, sir, with the morning star  
Retrieve the waste of night ; oh, you lov'd me, sir,  
Or seem'd to do, till having won from me  
Confession of a love I feel no more,  
You turn it to disdain. Oh think not, sir,  
That by one little deed in love, like law,  
You gain the full possession of my heart  
For ever ; and for this idle interview,  
Do you so profit by it as to learn  
Courtesy to a lady ; which when learn'd  
Come and repeat to me. [*Retires from window.*

*Ces.* • And having now  
Arraign'd me of the crime, why do you leave me

To plead my exculpation to the winds ?  
O Donna Anna, I call Heav'n to witness  
'Twas not my negligence, but my ill star  
That envied me such ill-deserv'd delight.  
If it be otherwise,  
Or even you *suspect* it otherwise,  
Spurn me, not only now, but ever, from you.  
Since better were it with a conscience clear  
Rejected, than suspiciously receiv'd.  
The Prince has kept me all the night with him  
About the city streets : your brother, who  
Was with us, can bear witness. Yet if still  
You think me guilty, but come back to say so,  
And let me plead once more, and you once more  
Condemn, and yet once more, and all in vain,  
If you will only but come back again !

*Anna (returning to the window).* And this is  
true ?

*Ces.* So help me Heav'n, it is !  
Why, could you, Anna, in your heart believe  
I could forget you ?

*Anna.* And, Don Cesar, you  
That, were it so, I could forget my love ?  
But see, the sun above the mountain-tops  
Begins to peep, and morn to welcome him

With all her smiles and tears. We must begone.  
I shall another quick occasion find,  
When I shall call, and you—not lag behind ?

*Ces.* Oh once more taken to your heart again,  
My shame turns glory, and delight my pain.  
Yet tell me—

*Anna.* Well ?

*Ces.* Of your suspicions *one*  
Lingers within you ?

*Anna.* Ay, a legion,  
That at your presence to their mistress' pride  
Turn traitors, and all fight on Cesar's side !

*Ces.* Farewell then, my divine implacable !

*Anna.* Victim and idol of my eyes, farewell !

[*Exeunt severally.*]

*Laz.* Well, and what has *my* mistress to say to  
me ? Does she also play the scornful lady ?

*Elv.* I ? why ?

*Laz.* Because my mistress' mistress does so to my  
master, whose love I follow in shadow.

*Elv.* Oh, I did not understand.

*Laz.* When he's happy then I'm jolly ;

When he's sad I'm melancholy :

• When he's love-infected, I

With the self-same fever fretted,

Either am bound like him to fry,  
Or if he chooses to forget it,  
I must even take his cue,  
And, Elvira, forget you.  
Do you enact your lady. Now,  
Begin. Be angry first—

*Elv.* But how ?

*Laz.* Hide up, no matter how or why,  
Behind the window-blind, while I  
Underneath it caterwaul ;—

*Elv.* What are the odds I don't reply ?

*Laz.* Just the odds that I don't call.

SCENE III. *A Room in the Palace.—The PRINCE and  
DON FELIX, discovered at the back of the stage.*

*Fel.* Why is your Highness sad ?

*Prince.* Not sad, Don Felix :

Oh would it were some certain shape of sorrow  
'That I might grapple with, not a vague host  
Of undefin'd emotions ! Oh how oft  
The patching up of but a single seam,  
Opens a hundred others ! Lucky he  
Who can to disenchantment bare his eyes  
Once and for all, and in oblivion  
Shut up vain hope for ever !

*Enter CESAR, ARIAS, and LAZARO, in front.*

*Ces.* (to ARIAS as they enter). And so at last was satisfied.

*Ar.* His Highness and Don Felix.

*Ces.* I am sure that he who profits not by opportunity scarce covets it enough. Taking advantage of the cleared heaven, I have here written my lady, asking her when she will give me the meeting she promised ; Lazaro, take the letter : Don Felix here, you can easily deliver it.

*Laz.* I'll feign an errand, and so get into the house. [Exit.

*Fel.* (to PRINCE). Cesar and Arias, my lord.

*Prince.* I know their business. Oh what a tempest does every breeze from that quarter raise in my bosom ! Well, gentlemen ?

*Ar.* Cesar, my lord, was telling me—

*Prince.* About his melancholy studies still ? Pray tell me.

*Ces.* Nay, my lord, all melancholy flies from the sunshine of your presence.

*Prince.* What then ?

*Ces.* I still distrust myself ; Don Arias must, my lord, answer for me.



*Prince.* Don Arias, then ?

*Ar. (aside).* Fresh confidences should bind me his anew.  
But comes too late.

*Ces. (aside to ARIAS).* Be careful what you say.

*Ar.* Trust me. (*CESAR retires.*)

*Prince (to ARIAS apart).* Well now, Don Arias.

*Ar.* At first much enraged against him, at last she yielded to his amorous excuses ; and, finding Don Felix here, he has sent her a letter beseeching another meeting.

*Prince.* When ?

*Ar.* 'This moment.

*Prince.* Who can doubt the upshot ! I must contrive to thwart them. (*Aloud.*) But ere I hear your story, Arias, I must tell Don Felix what I was about to do as these gentlemen came in and interrupted me : that his sister was ill—had fainted—from some vexation or fright, as I think.

*Fel.* Anna ?

*Prince.* So my sister told me. Had you not better see to her ?

*Fel.* With your leave, my lord. [*Exit.*

*Prince (aside).* And so, as I wished, prevent her answering, if not getting, the letter. (*Aloud.*) I will ask Nisida how it was. [*Exit.*

*Ces.* What did you tell the Prince to draw this new trouble on me ?

*Ar.* Ay, even so. Blame him who has been even lying in your service. Look you now, the Prince told me he had overheard the names "Don Felix" and "Donna Anna" between us as we came in talking ; and, tethered to that, I was obliged to drag this fainting fit into the service.

*Ces.* Oh, if Felix find Lazaro at his house !

*Ar.* Fear not, anxiety will carry him home faster than a letter Lazaro.

*Ces.* Alas that the revival of my joy  
Is the revival of a fresh annoy ;  
And that the remedy I long'd to seize  
Must slay me faster than the old disease. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *An Apartment in DON FELIX'S House.—*  
*DONNA ANNA and ELVIRA.*

*Elv.* Well, have you finisht writing ?

*Anna.* I have written,  
Not finisht writing. That could never be ;  
Each sentence, yea, each letter, as I write it,  
Suggesting others still. I had hop'd, Elvira,  
To sum my story up in a few words ;



*Fel.*

Nothing !

Your changing face and your solicitude  
To assure me there is nothing, but assure me  
How much there is. I have been told in fact,  
And hurried home thus suddenly,  
To hear it all.

*Anna (aside).* Alas ! he knows my secret !  
Felix, indeed, indeed, my love  
Shall not dishonour you.

*Fel.*

Your love ?

I'm more at loss than ever. But perhaps  
You feign this to divert me from the truth.  
What is the matter, truly ?

*Anna.*

Be assur'd

I never will disgrace you.

*Fel.*

Ah, she rambles,

Quite unrecover'd yet.

*Anna (apart to ELVIRA).* What shall I do ?

*Elv. (apart).* Deny it all, there's many a step between  
Suspicion and assurance.

*Fel.*

You, Elvira,

(My sister cannot) tell me what has happen'd ?

*Elv.* Oh, nothing but a swoon, sir :

My mistress fainted : that is all : accounts  
For all her paleness and discomfiture.



And saw a crowd of people, their swords out, fighting  
Before the door ; and (what will foolish fear  
Not conjure up ?) methought that one of them  
Was you—and suddenly a mortal chill  
Came over me, and—you must ask Elvira  
For all the rest.

*Elv. (aside).* Why ever have the trouble  
Of coining lies when truth will pass as well !

*Enter LAZARO.*

*Laz.* So far so good.

*Fel.* Lazaro ?

*Laz. (seeing FELIX).* Is't his ghost ? for certainly  
I left his body at the palace.

*Anna.* My evil stars bear hard upon me !

*Laz.* I'm done for, unless a good lie—(*Aloud.*)  
Ruffian, rascal, scamp !

*Fel.* How now ?

*Laz.* Murderer ! villain !

*Fel.* Softly, softly, breathe awhile ! what's the  
matter ?

*Laz.* Nothing, nothing, yet had I not exploded  
incidentally, or as it were superficially, I had altogether  
burst. •Oh the rascal ! the slave !

*Fel.* But tell me the matter.

*Laz.* Oh the matter—indeed the matter—you may well ask it—indeed you may—Oh the murderer !

*Fel.* Come, come, tell us.

*Laz.* Ay, well, look here, my lords and ladies, lend me your ears ; I was at cards : yes : for you must know, my lord, I sometimes like a bout as my betters do : you understand this ?

*Fel.* Yes—well ?

*Laz.* Well, being at cards, as I say : ay, and playing pretty high too : for I must confess that sometimes, like my betters—you understand ?

*Fel.* Go on—go on.

*Laz.* Well, being, as I said, at cards,  
And playing pretty high too—mark me that—  
I get into discussion or dispute,  
(Whichever you will call it) with a man,  
If man he may be call'd who man was none—  
Ye gods ! to prostitute the name of man  
On such as that !—call him a manikin,  
A mandarin, a mandrake,  
Rather than man—I mean in *soul*, mark you ;  
For in his outward man he was a man,  
Ay, and a man of might. Nay, more than men,  
A giant, one may say. Well, as I said,      •  
This wretch and I got to high words, and then

(Whither high words so often lead) to blows;  
Out came our swords. The rascal having seen  
What a desperate fellow at my tool I was,  
Takes him eleven others of his kidney,  
Worse than himself, and all twelve set on me.  
I seeing them come on, ejaculate,  
“From all such rascals, single or in league,  
Good Lord, deliver us,” set upon all twelve  
With that same sword, mark me, our gracious  
Prince

Gave me but yesternight, and, God be praised,  
Disgrac’d not in the giving—  
Beat the whole twelve of them back to a porch,  
Where, after bandying a blow with each,  
Each getting something to remember me by,  
Back in a phalanx all came down on me,  
And then dividing, sir, into two parties,  
‘Twelve upon this side—do you see? and nine  
On this—and three in front—

*Fel.*

But, Lazaro,

Why, twelve and nine are twenty-one—and three—  
Why, your twelve men are grown to twenty-four!  
How’s this?

*Laz.* • How’s this? why, counting in the shadows—  
You see I count the shadows—twenty-four,



Shadows and all—you see !<sup>1</sup>

*Fel.*

I see.

*Laz.*

Well, sir,

Had not that good sword which our gracious Prince  
Gave me but yesterday broke in my hand,  
I should have had to pay for mass, I promise you,  
For every mother's son of them !

*Fel.*

Indeed ?

But, Lazaro, I see your sword's entire :  
How's that ?

*Laz.*

The most extraordinary part

Of all—

*Fel.* Well, tell us.

*Laz.*

Why, I had first us'd

My dagger upon one : and when my sword  
Snapt, with its stump, sir, daggerwise I fought,  
As thus ; and that with such tremendous fury,  
That, smiting a steel buckler, I struck out  
Such sparks from it, that, by the light of them,  
Snatching up the fallen fragment of my sword,  
I pieced the two together.

<sup>1</sup> One cannot fail to be reminded of the multiplication of Falstaff's men in buckram, not the only odd coincidence between the two poets. Lazaro's solution of the difficulty seems to me quite worthy of Falstaff.

*Fel.* But the dagger  
You fought with first, and lost, you say—why, Lazaro,  
'Tis in your girdle.

*Laz.* I account for that  
Easily. Look, sir, I drew it, as I said,  
And struck amain. The man I drew it on,  
Seeing the coming blow, caught hold of it,  
And struck it back on me ; I, yet more skilful,  
With God's good help did so present myself  
That, when he struck at me, my own dagger's point  
Return'd into its sheath, as here you see it.  
Enough, I heard the cry of "Alguazils !"  
Ran off, and, entering the first open door,  
Now ask for sanctuary at your feet.

*Fel.* I think it is your trepidation  
Makes you talk nonsense.

*Anna.* Surely, my brother, this was the riot that  
so frightened me.

*Fel.* And was I then the man, "if man it could be  
called who man was none," that Lazaro fought with ?

*Anna.* I know not, I only know 'twas some one  
of a handsome presence like yours.

*Fel. (aside).* Perhaps his master—I much suspect  
it was Cesar that was dicing, and afterward fighting ;  
and his servant, to cover him, invents this foolish

story—(*Aloud.*) I will look into the street and see if it be clear.      [*Exit.*]

*Elv.* Now say your say.

*Anna* (*giving LAZARO her letter*). And quickly, Lazaro ; taking this letter—

*Laz.* (*giving CESAR's*). And you this premium upon it.

*Anna.* Bid him be sure to come to me this evening ; I have much to say. And thus much to you, Lazaro ; your quarrel came in the nick of time to account for a swoon I had occasion to feign.

*Elv.* Quick ! quick ! he's coming back.

*Laz.* Madam, farewell.

*Anna.*      And if my plot succeed,  
Feign'd quarrel shall to true love-making lead.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *A Room in the Palace ; CESAR and ARIAS talking : to whom after a time enter LAZARO.*

*Laz.* Oh, I have had rare work.

*Ces.* The letter ! (*takes it from LAZARO*).

*Ar.* And how did all end ?

*Laz.* Well—as I am home at last safe and sound.

*Ces.* Arias, you share my heart ; even read my letter with me. (*They read.*)

*Laz. (aside).* That my master should trust that babbler who let out about my wooden sword to the Prince ! my life upon't, he'll do the same to him ; for he who sucks in gossip is the first to leak it.

*Ar.* Sweetly she writes !

*Ces.* How should it be but sweet,  
Where modesty and wit and true love meet ?

*Ar.* And expects you this evening !

*Ces.* Till which each minute is an hour, each hour  
A day, a year, a century !

*Laz.* And then  
In sæcula sæculorum. Amen.

*Ar.* The Prince !

*Ces.* I dread his seeing me.

*Ar.* But how ?

*Ces.* Lest, as already twice, he thwart me now.

*Enter PRINCE.*

*Prince.* Cesar here, when I am on fire to know the upshot of my plot upon his letter<sup>1</sup> must get quit of him.

*Ces.* Good day, my lord.

*Prince.* Well, any news abroad ?

*Ar.* Not that I know of, my lord.

*Prince.* Cesar, there are despatches in my closet, have been lying there since yesterday, should they not be seen to at once ?

*Ces.* My lord ! (*Aside.*) I foresaw it !

*Prince.* Yes ! I would have you look to them and report them to me directly.

*Ces. (aside.)* Ah, this is better ! (*Aloud.*) I'll see to them.

(*Aside.*) And then, I trust, day's work with daylight o'er,  
Man, nor malicious star, shall cross me more.

[*Exeunt CESAR and LAZARO.*]

*Prince.* And now about the letter ?

*Ar.* I only know, my lord, that though Felix got home first, Lazaro got there somehow, somehow gave her the letter, and somehow got an answer.

*Prince.* Hast seen it ?

*Ar.* Yes, my lord.

*Prince.* And—

*Ar.* She appoints another meeting this evening.

*Prince.* And I must myself despatch his work, so as to leave him free to-night ! Oh Arias, what can I do more ?

*Ar.* Cannot your Highness go there yourself, and so at least stop further advancement ?

*Prince.* True, true ; and yet I know not ; it might  
be too suspicious. I must consider what shall be done ;  
And what more subtle engine I may try  
Against these lovers' ingenuity. *[Exeunt.*

---

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.*—PRINCE and DON  
ARIAS.

*Ar.* How well the night went off ! did not the  
music,  
The lights, the dances, and the ladies' eyes,  
Divert your Grace's sadness ?

*Prince.* Rather, Arias,  
Doubled it.  
Whithersoever Donna Anna mov'd,  
My eyes, that ever followed hers along,  
Saw them pursue Don Cesar through the crowd  
And only rest on him ; I curs'd him then,  
And then excus'd him, as the judge should do  
Whose heart is yearning with the guilt he damns.

*Ar.* Where will this passion end ?

*Prince.* I think in death,  
Led by the fatal secret you have told me.



*Ces.* Ay, and dead weary of these sicken'd hopes  
And lost occasions, I have resolv'd to break  
Through disappointment and impediment,  
And turning secret love to open suit,  
Secure at once her honour, and her brother's,  
And my own everlasting happiness,  
By asking her fair hand, fore all the world ! [*Exit.*

*Ar.* You heard, my lord ?

*Prince (advancing).* And if he ask her hand,  
Felix will grant it as assuredly  
As I would my own sister's ! Oh, Don Arias,  
What now ?

*Ar.* Don Felix comes.

*Prince.* There's yet one way,  
He comes in time—Felix !

*Enter FELIX.*

*Fel.* My lord !

*Prince.* Come hither.  
You came in time—were present in my thoughts  
Before your coming. Hark you. I have long  
Long'd to requite your many services,  
By more substantial meed than empty breath,  
Too oft, they say, the end of princes' favour.



Much I design for you ; but in mean time,  
As some foretaste and earnest of my love,  
A kinsman, a near kinsman of my own,  
Has set his heart upon the lady Anna,  
Your sister ; fain would have her hand in marriage :  
And I, with your good liking,  
Have promis'd it to him.

*Fel.* Oh, my good lord,  
Your favour overpowers me !

*Prince.* Much content  
Both for his sake, so near of my own blood,  
(His letters show how deep his passion is,)  
And yours, if you approve it.

*Fel.* Did I not,  
Your will would be my law.

*Prince.* Why this is well then.  
We'll talk it over at our leisure ; meanwhile,  
For certain reasons, let this contract be  
Between ourselves alone—you taking care  
To pledge your sister's hand no other way.

*Fel.* Oh, trust to me, my lord—Heav'n watch  
above  
Your Highness !

*Prince (aside).* Oh mad end of foolish love! [*Exit.*]

**Fel.** I'll straight away,

And tell my sister of the happiness  
Awaits her. And may be shall learn of her  
How my own suit prospers with Nisida,  
The Prince's sister, which his present favour  
Now blows upon so fairly. Cesar !

*Enter CESAR.*

*Ces.* Well found at last. Oh, Felix !

*Fel.* What is't now ?

Your heart seems labouring.

*Ces.* Yours must lighten it.  
You know, Don Felix, how by blood and birth  
I am a gentleman—not less, I trust,  
In breeding and attainment ; my estate  
Sufficient for my birth—nurst by the Prince  
In his own palace from my earliest years,  
Until, howe'er unworthy of such honour,  
Receiv'd into his inmost heart and council :  
So far at least fitted for state affairs,  
As ever given from my earliest youth  
Rather to letters than to arms. Enough :  
You know all this, and know, or ought to know,  
How much I am your friend ?

*Fel.* I do believe it.

*Ces.* Yea, Felix, and would fain that friendship  
knit

By one still closer tie—Have you not guess'd,  
By many a sign more unmistakeable  
Than formal declaration, that I love—  
Presumptuously perhaps—but that I love  
One of your house. Which saying all is said :  
For she is all your house who calls you “ Brother.”

*Fel.* Cesar, Heav'n knows how faithfully my  
heart

Answers to yours in all ; how much I prize  
The honour you would do me. Would to God  
That I had seen the signs of love you talk of,  
Pointing this way ; there is, I do assure you,  
No man in all the world to whom more gladly  
I would ally my sister and myself ;  
But I did not. I grieve that it is so,  
But dare not cancel what is now, too late,  
Irrevocably agreed on with another.

*Ces.* By this “ too late,” I think you only mean  
To tantalize my too late declaration.  
If that be your intent, I am well punisht  
Already ; be content with my contrition.  
You say you love me ; and would well desire  
To see me wed your sister ; seal at once

My happiness, nor chill the opening day,  
Nor my love's blossom, by a lingering "*Yea*."

*Fel.* Indeed, indeed, my Cesar, not to revenge  
Delay of speech, or insufficient token,  
But with repeated sorrow I repeat,  
My sister's hand is pledg'd beyond recall,  
And to another ; whom, for certain reasons,  
I dare not name, not even to herself,  
As yet—

*Ces.* If I survive, 'tis that fate knows  
How much more terrible is life than death !  
Don Felix, you have well reveng'd yourself  
Upon my vain ambition, speech delay'd,  
And signs that you would not articulate ;  
But let my fate be as it will, may hers,  
Hers, yea, and his whose life you link to hers,  
Be so indissolubly prosperous,  
That only death forget to envy them !  
Farewell.

*Fel.* Farewell then : and remember, Cesar,  
Let not this luckless business interrupt  
Our long and loving intimacy.

*Ces.* Nay,  
It shall not, cannot, Felix, come what may.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

*Enter PRINCE.*

*Prince.* When in my love's confusion and excess  
I fancy many a fond unlikely chance,  
Desire grows stronger, resolution less,  
I linger more the more I would advance.  
False to my nobler self, I madly seize  
Upon a medicine alien to my ill ;  
And feeding still with that should cure disease,  
At once my peace and reputation kill  
By turns ; as the conflicting passions fire,  
And chase each other madly through my breast,  
I worship and despise, blame and admire,  
Weep and rejoice, and covet and detest.  
Alas ! a bitter bargain he must choose,  
Who love with life, or life with love, must lose !

*Enter LAZARO.*

*Laz.* Where can my master be ? I shall go crazy,  
I think, running from room to room, and house to  
house, after him and his distracted wits.

*Prince.* Lazaro ! Well, what news abroad ?

*Laz.* Ah, my lord, there has been little of that  
under the sun this long while, they say. For  
instance, the slasht doublets just come into fashion,

and which they call new ; why 'twas I invented them years ago.

*Prince.* You ? how ?

*Laz.* Why, look you ; once on a time when I was not so well off as now, and my coat was out at elbows, the shirt came through : many saw and admired—and so it has grown into a fashion.

*Prince.* Who listens to you but carries away food for reflection ! [*Exit.*

*Laz.* Aha ! you are somewhat surfeited with that already, I take it.

So while the world her wonted journey keeps,  
Lazarus chuckles while poor Dives weeps.

*Enter CESAR.*

*Ces.* Lazaro, I waited till the Prince was gone.  
Listen to me. Don Felix has betroth'd  
His sister to another, not to me ;  
He will not tell me whom, nor does it matter :  
All ill alike. But out of this despair  
I'll pluck the crown that hope could never reach.  
There is no time to lose ; this very night  
I'll carry her away.

*Laz.* • Only beware  
Telling Don Arias what you mean to do.



*Ces.* Arias, my friend ! All's lost !  
The love I grew deep in my heart of hearts  
Is wither'd at the moment of its blossom.  
I went to Felix, ask'd his sister's hand :  
It was betroth'd, he told me, to another :  
I was too late. All's lost ! It were in vain  
Weeping for that I never can attain :  
I will forget what I must needs forego,  
And turn to other—

*Laz.* (*to ARIAS*). Pray, sir, pardon me ;  
But pri'thee say no more to him just now ;  
It brings on such a giddiness.

*Ar.* Alas !

But can I be of service ?

*Laz.* Only, sir,  
By saying nothing more.

*Ar.* I am truly sorry. [*Exit.*

*Laz.* That you can lie no longer in the matter.  
Oh, the Lord speed you !

*Ces.* O Love, if mortal anguish ever move thee,  
At this last hour requite me with one smile  
For all thy sorrows ! let what I have suffer'd  
Appease thy jealous godhead ! I complain not  
That you condemn my merits as too poor  
For the great glory they aspire unto ;



Yet who could brook to see a rival bear  
The wreath that neither can deserve to wear !

*Enter PRINCE and ARIAS.*

*Prince (to ARIAS).* Even so ?  
Good. That he may not think 'twas out of malice,  
I made my business trench upon his love,  
Now that his love's but Love-in-idleness,  
I'll occupy him still. Cesar !

*Ces.* My lord !

*Prince.* I had like to have forgot: 'Tis Monday,  
is't not ?  
I have despatches both for Rome and Naples.  
We must see to them to-night.

*Ces.* My lord !

*Prince.* Bring hither  
Your writing.

*Ces. (apart).* Oh ! the cup-full at my lips,  
And dasht down, and for ever !  
[*To LAZARO.*] Villain, the victory you told me of !

*Laz.* What fault of mine, sir?

*Ces.* What fault ! said you not  
All now was well ?

**Laz.** Is't I who make it wrong?

*Ces.* You meddled.

Prince. Are you ready ?

Ces. Immediately.

Alas, alas ! how shall my pen run clear  
Of the thick fountain that is welling here !

Prince (*aside*). And I shall learn from you how  
that dark pair

Contrive to smile, Jealousy and Despair.

[*Desk and papers brought in : exeunt ARIAS and LAZARO.*

Now, are you ready ? (*CESAR sits at the desk.*)

Ces. Ay, my lord.

Prince. Begin then.

"I am secretly"—

Ces. "Secretly"—driven to madness !

Prince. "About the marriage"—

Ces. "Marriage"—that never shall take place !

Prince. "All is fair for you"—

Ces. "For you"—though perdition to me !

Prince. "Believe me"—

Ces. I shall not survive it !

Prince. "That Donna Anna of Castelvì"

Ces. "That Donna Anna"—I can write no more !

Prince. "Is such in birth, beauty, and wit"—

Ces. Oh, my lord, pardon me ; but may I know  
This letter's destination ?

Prince. Eh ? to Flanders.

C.

N

Why do you ask ?

*Ces.*                      To Flanders ! But, my lord,  
Surely no Flemish courier leaves to-day.

Might not to-morrow—

*Prince (aside).*                      At the name of Anna  
His colour chang'd. (*Aloud.*) No matter. 'Tis begun,  
And we'll ev'n finish it. Where left I off ?

*Ces. (reading).*      "Can write no more"—

*Prince.*                      Eh ? "Write no more ?" Did I  
Say that ?

*Ces.*                      My lord ?

*Prince.*                      The letter. Give me it.

*Ces. (aside).*      Come what come may then, what is  
writ is writ !

*Prince (reading).*      "I am secretly driven to madness  
about the marriage that never shall take place. All is  
fair for you, though perdition to me. Believe me I  
shall not survive it, that Donna Anna—I can write  
no more."

Was this what I dictated ?

*Ces. (throwing himself at the PRINCE'S feet).* O my lord,  
O noble Alexander ! if the service  
You have so often prais'd beyond desert  
Deserve of you at all, snatch not from me  
The only crown I ever ask'd for it,

To gild a less familiar brow withal.  
This lady, Donna Anna,  
Whom you are now devoting to another,  
Is mine, my lord ; mine, if a two years' suit  
Of unremitted love not unreturn'd  
Should make her mine ; which mine beyond dispute  
Had long ere this have made her, had not I  
How many a golden opportunity  
Lost from my love to spend it on my Prince !  
And this is my reward ! Oh, knew I not  
How the ill star that rules my destiny  
Might of itself dispose the gracious Prince,  
Who call'd me for his friend from infancy,  
To act my bitterest enemy unawares,  
I might believe some babbler—

*Prince.*

Nay, Don Cesar,

If in all these cross purposes of love  
You recognise the secret hand of fate,  
Accuse no mortal tongue, which could not reach  
The stars that rule us all, wag as it would.  
Enough. I am aggriev'd, and not, I think,  
Unjustly, that without my pleasure, nay,  
Without my knowledge even, you, my subject,  
And servant, (leaving the dear name of friend,)  
Dispos'd so of yourself, and of a lady

Whose grace my court considers as its own.  
 Give me the pen : and, as you write so laxly,  
 I must myself report—

*Ces.*                                      My lord !

*Prince.*                                      The pen. (*He writes.*)

*Ces.* If in misfortune's quiver there be left  
 One arrow, let it come !

*Prince.*                                      You could not write,  
 Don Cesar ; but perhaps can seal this letter :  
 'Tis for Don Felix ; send it to him straight.  
 Or stay—I'd have it go by a sure hand :  
 Take it yourself directly.

*Ces.*                                      At one blow  
 My love and friendship laid for ever low !      [*Exit.*]

*Enter FELIX and ARIAS.*

*Ar.* The letter must be written.

*Prince.*                                      Oh, Don Felix,  
 I have this moment sent to you. No matter :  
 'Twas but to say I have this instant heard  
 Your sister's bridegroom is in Parma ; nay,  
 Perhaps already at your house.

*Fel.*                                      Oh, my lord,  
 How shall I thank you for this gracious news ?

*Prince.* Nay, we will hear them from your sister's lips.

To her at once. [*Exit FELIX.*

And now, Don Arias,  
You have to swear upon the holy cross  
That hilts this sword, that neither Donna Anna  
Know that I ever lov'd her, nor Don Cesar  
I ever cross'd his love.

*Ar.* Upon this cross  
I swear it ; and beseech you in return  
Never, my lord, to tell Don Cesar who  
Reveal'd his secret.

*Prince.* Be it so. I promise.  
And now to see whether indeed I dare  
Compete with him whose lofty name I wear. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A room in FELIX's House.*—ANNA and ELVIRA.

*Anna.* Beside the charge of my own love, Elvira,  
Whose crosses, I believe, will slay me soon,  
My brother has confided to me at last,  
His passion for the Princess Nisida ;  
And, for he knows that I am near her heart,  
Would have me whisper it into her ears ;  
Which, were it such a passion as I feel,



*Fel.* I thank you, Cesar. (*Reads.*)

"Because happiness is the less welcome when anticipated, I have hitherto withheld from you that he to whom I have engaged your sister's hand, is—Don Cesar ! in whom unites all that man or woman can desire. If the man lives who can deserve such glory, it is he. Farewell."

*Ces.* Great Heav'n !

*Fcl.* Nay, read the letter.

*Enter PRINCE, NISIDA, ARIAS, and Train.*

*Prince.* He shall not need,

Myself am here to speak it.

*Ces. (kneeling).* Oh, my lord !

*Prince.* Rise, Cesar. If your service, as it did,  
Ask'd for reward, I think you have it now ;  
Such as not my dominion alone,  
But all the world beside, could not supply.  
Madam, your hand ; Don Cesar, yours. I come  
To give away the bride :  
And after must immediately away  
To Flanders, where by Philip's trumpet led,  
I will wear Maestricht's laurel round my brows ;  
Leaving meanwhile Don Felix Governor  
Till my return—by this sign manual.

(*Puts NISIDA's hand in FELIX's.*)





•  
GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

GIL PEREZ.

ISABEL, *his Sister.*

DON ALONSO, } *his two Friends.*  
MANUEL MENDEZ, }

PEDRO, } *Servants in his house.*  
CASILDA, }

---

DONNA JUANA, *a Portuguese Lady.*

JUAN BAPTISTA, *a Lover of Isabel.*

THE LORD HIGH ADMIRAL OF PORTUGAL.

DONNA LEONOR, *his Cousin.*

A SHERIFF.

A JUDGE.

LEONARDO, *a Traveller.*

ALGUAZILS, OFFICERS, ATTENDANTS, FARMERS, &c.

## GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN.

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *Outside GIL PEREZ's House.—Enter PEDRO, running; GIL PEREZ after him with a drawn dagger; and ISABEL and CASILDA interceding.*

**I** *SAB.* Fly, Pedro, fly !

*Gil.* And what the use his flying  
If I be after him ?

*Ped.* Hold him ! hold him back,  
Both of you !

*Gil.* By the Lord, I'll do for him.

*Isab.* But why so savage with him ?

*Gil.* He must pay  
The long arrear of mischief you've run up.

*Isab.* I understand you not.

*Gil.* I'll kill him first,  
And then explain.

*Isab.* •I, who dread not bodily violence,  
Dread your injurious words. What have I done

That you should use me thus ?—my enemy,  
And not my brother.

*Gil.* You say well your enemy,  
Who, if you do as you have done so long,  
Will one day bathe his sword in your heart's blood,  
And after in his own, and so wipe out  
One scandal from the world.

*Ped.* As the good soul  
Who meddles to make peace between two brawlers  
Oft gets the bloody nose, I'll take the hint.  
Farewell, fair Spain ! for evermore farewell !

*Gil.* Here ! hark you, sir ;  
Before you go ; you have escap'd this time  
By luck, not by desert. I give you warning,  
Keep from my sight : for if I see your face  
Fifty years hence, among the antipodes,  
I'll pay you off.

*Ped.* Pray don't disturb yourself ;  
I'll take you at your word, and straight be off  
To some old friends of mine—indeed relations—  
In central Africa—the Ourang Outangs :  
A colony so distant as I trust  
Will satisfy us both. And so, good bye.

*Exit ; CASILDA after him.*

*Isab.* He's gone, poor fellow.

And now perhaps, sir, as we are alone,  
You'll tell me why you do affront me thus.

*Gil.* Sister—oh, would to God that I had none  
To call by such a name at such expense !  
And can you think that I have been so blind,  
As well as dumb, not to be ware the tricks  
Of the sly gentleman who follows you  
So constantly, and who, if this goes on,  
Will one day filch away, not your own only,  
But the long garner'd honour of our house ?  
Why, I have seen it all from first to last,  
But would not show my teeth till I could bite ;  
Because, in points like this, a man of honour  
Speaks once, and once for all.  
This once is now. I'll speak my mind to you ;  
Which, if you cannot understand, to-morrow  
I must repeat in quite another language.  
I know your man—Juan Baptista—one  
Not man enough for me, and so, I tell you,  
Not for my sister. This should be enough,  
Without his being, as he is, a Jew.  
To get you from his reach I brought you here  
To Salvatierra, deep amid the mountains,  
And safe enough I thought ; but even here  
His cursed letters reach you through the hands

Of that fine rascal I have just pack'd off.  
 There ; I have told my story ; take't to heart ;  
 Dismiss your man at once, or, by the Lord,  
 If you and he persist, I'll fire his house,  
 And save the Inquisition that much trouble.

*Isab.* Your anger makes you blind—accusing me  
 Of things I never did.

*Gil.* You never did !

*Isab.* But so it is, poor women must submit  
 To such insinuations.

*Gil.* Pray, was't I  
 Insinuated that letter then ?

*Isab.* Peace, peace !  
 I can explain it all, and shall, when fit.  
 What would you have of me ? You are my brother,  
 And not my husband, sir ; consider that :  
 And therefore, in fraternal kindness bound,  
 Should even take my word without ado.  
 You talk of honour : is not honour then  
 Slow to suspect—would rather be deceived  
 Itself than prematurely to accuse ?  
 I am your sister, Perez, and I know  
 My duty towards you and myself. Enough—  
 Which, if you cannot understand, to-morrow  
 I must repeat in quite another language. [Exit.

*Gil.* She says not ill ; it better were indeed  
 Had I kept on the mask a little longer,  
 Till they had dropt theirs beyond all denial.  
 She's right, and I was wrong ; but from this time  
 I'll steer another course.

*Enter CASILDA.*

*Cas.* A gentleman  
 (Of Portugal, he says,) is at the door,  
 And asks for you.

*Gil.* Bid him come in. Away,  
 My troubles, for a while ! *[Exit CASILDA.*

*Enter MANUFL MENDEZ.*

*Man.* 'Twas well, Gil Perez,  
 You sent so quickly, or my impetuosity  
 Had overrun your leave.

*Gil.* What, Manuel Mendez !  
 Come to my arms. What ! you in Salvatierra ?

*Man.* And, I assure you, at no small expense  
 Of risk and heart-ache.

*Gil.* That's unwelcome news.

*Man.* Not when 'tis all forgotten in the joy  
 Of seeing you again.

*Gil.* I shall not rest



Till I have heard ; ill-manner'd though it be  
 To tax a man scarce winded from a journey  
 With such expense of breath.

*Man.*

Then listen, Gil.

You, I am sure, remember (time and absence  
 Cannot have washt so much from memory)  
 The pleasant time when you were last at Lisbon,  
 And grac'd my house by making it your home.  
 I need not tell of all we did and talk'd,  
 Save what concerns me now ; of the fair lady  
 You knew me then enamour'd of, (how deeply  
 I need not say—being a Portuguese,  
 Which saying, all is said)—Donna Juana,  
 At whose mere name I tremble, as some seer  
 Smit with the sudden presence of his God.  
 Two years we lived in the security  
 Of mutual love, with so much jealousy  
 (Without which love is scarcely love at all)  
 As serv'd to freshen up its sleeping surface,  
 But not to stir its depths. Ah, dangerous  
 To warm the viper, or, for idle sport,  
 Trust to the treacherous sea—sooner or later  
 They turn upon us ; so these jealousies  
 I lik'd to toy with first turn'd upon me ;  
 When suddenly a rich young cavalier,

Well grac'd with all that does and ought to please,  
 (For I would not revenge me with my tongue  
 Upon his name, but with my sword in 's blood,)  
 Demanded her in marriage of her father ;  
 Who being poor, and bargains quickly made  
 'Twixt avarice and wealth, quickly agreed.  
 The wedding day drew nigh that was to be  
 The day of funeral too—mixt dance and dirge,  
 And grave and bridal chamber both in one.  
 The guests were met ; already night began  
 Loose the full tide of noisy merriment,  
 When I strode in ; straight through the wedding  
 throng

Up to the bride and bridegroom where they were,  
 And, seizing her with one hand, with the other  
 Struck him a corpse ; and daring all, to die  
 Fighting, or fighting carry off my prize,  
 Carried her off ; lifted her on a horse  
 I had outside ; struck spur ; and lightning-like  
 Away, until we reach'd the boundary  
 Of Portugal, and, safe on Spanish ground,  
 At last drew breath and bridle. Then on hither,  
 Where I was sure of refuge in the arms  
 Of my old friend Gil Perez ; whom I pray  
 Not so much on the score of an old friendship,

So long and warm, but as a fugitive  
 Asking protection at his generous hands—  
 A plea the noble never hear in vain.  
 Nor for myself alone, but for my lady  
 Who comes with me, and whom I just have left  
 Under the poplars by the river-side,  
 Till I had told my news, and heard your answer.  
 A servant whom we met with on the way,  
 Pointed your house out—whither, travel-tir'd,  
 Press'd for my life, and deep in love with her  
 I bring, as curst by those I left behind,  
 And trusting him I come to—

*Gil.*

'Tut, tut, tut !

Go on so, I'll not answer you at all ;  
 All this fine talk to me ! from Manuel Mendez !  
 As if 'twere not enough to say " Friend Gil,  
 I've left a gentleman I slew behind,  
 And got a living lady with me, so  
 Am come to visit you." Why go about  
 With phrases and fine speeches ? I shall answer  
 Quite unpolitely thus, " Friend Manuel,  
 This house of mine is yours—for months, for years,  
 For all your life, with all the service in 't  
 That I or mine can do for you." So back;  
 And bring your lady, telling her from me

I stay behind because I am unapt  
At such fine speeches as her lover makes.

*Man.* Oh, let me thank you—

*Gil.* Nay, 'twere better far  
Go to your lady ; who may be ill at ease  
Alone in a strange place. [Exit MANUEL.

What, Isabel ! *(She enters.)*

Isabel, if my former love and care  
Deserve of you at all, forget awhile  
All difference, (for there's a time for all,)  
And help me now to honour an old friend  
'To whom I owe great hospitalities ;  
Manuel Mendez, who with his bride is come  
To be my guest.

*Isab.* I'll do my best for you.  
But hark ! what noise ? *(Shouts and fighting within.)*

*Gil.* A quarrel's up somewhere.

*Voice within.* Take him alive or dead.

*Another voice.* He'll slip us yet !

*Isab.* Some one on horseback flying at full speed  
From his pursuers.

*Voices within.* Fire upon him ! fire ! *(Shots within.)*

*Isab.* Mercy, he's dead !

*Gil.* • Not he ; only his horse ;  
And see he's up again, and gallantly

Flashing his sword around on his pursuers  
 Keeps them at bay, and fighting, fighting, still  
 Retreats—

*Isab.* And to our house too—

*Enter DON ALONSO.*

*Alon.* Shelter ! shelter !  
 In pity to a wretched man at last  
 Foregone !

*Gil.* What, Don Alonso !

*Alon.* But a moment, .  
 To ask you cover my retreat, Gil Perez ;  
 My life depends on reaching Portugal.

*Gil.* Away then to the bridge you see below there.  
 God speed you.

*Alon.* And keep you ! *[Exit.*

*Voices without.* This way ! this way !

*Gil.* But just in time !

*Enter SHERIFF with Officers.*

*Officer.* I'm sure he pass'd by here.

*Gil.* Well, gentlemen, your business ?

*Sher.* Don Alonso—  
 Came he this way ?

*Gil.* He did, and he went that,  
 And must almost, unless I much mistake,

Be got to Portugal. For, by the Lord, sir,  
His feet seem'd feather'd with the wind !

*Sher.* Away then !  
After him !

*Gil.* Stop a moment !

*Sher.* Stop ! what mean you ?

*Gil.* Just what I say. Come, Mr. Sheriff, come,  
You've done your duty ; be content with that ;  
And don't hunt gentlemen like wolves to death ;  
Justice is one thing, and fair play's another,  
All the world over.

*Sher.* When I've got my man  
I'll answer you.

*Gil.* Perhaps before.

*Sher.* Why, sir,  
Would you detain me ?

*Gil.* Why, if logic fails,  
I must try other argument.

*Sher.* As what, sir ?

*Gil.* Why, mathematical. As how ? Look here.  
You see me draw this line. Well then, 'fore God,  
The man who passes it—dies. Q. E. D.

*Sher.* Down with him !

*Gil.* • Back, I advise you.

*Voices.* Down with him !

198 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT I

*Gil.* Chicken-hearts ! Curs ! Oh, you will down  
with me,  
Will you indeed ? and this the way you do it ?  
*(He fights with them.)*

*One.* Oh, I am slain.

*Sher.* I'm wounded.

*Gil.* Back with you !  
*[Exit, driving them in.]*

SCENE II. *The River-side.*—*Enter JUANA and MANUEL.*

*Jua.* Oh never did I owe more to your love,  
Than for this quick return.

*Man.* O my Juana,  
The love such beauty as your own inspires,  
Surmounts impossibilities. However,  
I needed not go on to Salvatierra,  
Lighting on what I look'd for by the way,  
Among the mountains ; where my friend Gil Perez  
(Whose honour I insult if I declare it)  
Has pitcht his tent, with hospitality  
Prophetic of our coming ;  
So peaceably our love may fold its wings  
Under the shadow of my friend's.

*Jua.* Oh, Manuel,

She who has left home, country, friends, and fame,  
 And would contentedly leave life, for you,  
 Desires no other temple of her love  
 Than a bleak rock, whose unchang'd stedfastness  
 Shall not out-wear her own.

*Alon.* (*within*). I can no more !

*Jua.* Listen ! What noise is that ?

*Man.* A cavalier  
 Still with his sword in his exhausted hand.  
 He falls !

*Enter ALONSO, who falls at the side.*

*Alon.* They e'en must have me.

*Man.* Courage, sir.  
 Wounded ? (*Voices within.*)

*Alon.* Hark ! the bloodhounds are close by ;  
 And worse, they must have slain Gil Perez first,  
 Who else—

*Enter GIL.*

*Gil.* Confound the rogues, they've got the bridge  
 And the way to 't, and heav'n itself, I think,  
 To fight upon their side.

*Man.* Gil, what is this ?



200 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT I

*Gil.* Trying to help a friend out of a ditch,  
I've tumbled in myself.

*Man.* Come, we are two  
In hand, and one in heart ; at least can fight  
And die together.

*Alon.* Nay, add me ;  
The cause—

*Gil.* There's but a moment. Manuel,  
I charge you by your friendship,  
Draw not your sword to-day.

*Man.* Not I my sword '  
When theirs are on you ?

*Jua.* (*clinging to MANUEL*). Heav'ns !

*Voices, within.* This way ! this way !

*Man.* They're coming.

*Gil.* (*to ALONSO*). Listen ! you can swim ?

*Alon.* Alas—

*Gil.* I mean upon my shoulders. Manuel,  
We two shall cross to Portugal,  
Where follow us they may, but cannot seize us.  
Meanwhile I leave you master of my house  
And honour, centred (no time to say more)  
In Isabel, my sister. Swear to me  
That you will see to this.

*Man.* I swear it, Gil.

SCENE III.] GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN 201

*Gil.* Enough, your hand ! Adieu ! Now courage, sir !

*(Takes ALONSO on his shoulders and plunges into the river.)*

*Jua.* The man swims like a dolphin.

*Gil. (within).* Manuel.

Remember !

*Man.* How he wrestles with the flood !  
And now is half-way over.

*Gil. (within).* Manuel,  
Remember ! I have trusted all to you.

*Man.* Waste not your breath. I'll do 't.

*Gil. (within).* Adieu !

*Man.* Adieu !

*[Exit MANUEL with JUANA.]*

SCENE III. *The Portuguese bank of the River.—Enter the ADMIRAL of Portugal and DONNA LEONOR as from hunting.*

*Adm.* Since summer's fiery Sirius, fair cousin,  
Neither from place nor power in heaven declines,  
Will you not rest ?

*Leonor.* Ah, what a noble sport  
Is hunting ! who so abject-spirited  
As not to love its generous cruelty ?



fright and weariness, I must rest awhile. Well, this is Portugal, where, to be sure, a poor Spanish pimp may hope to escape ferocious honour. That I should lose a post where others make their thousands at my first function ! But who are these ? Fine folks too ! Pray Heaven they be in want of an officer.

*Adm.* A horse will soon carry you to the villa. Hark you, sir ! (*To PEDRO.*)

*Ped.* My lord !

*Adm.* Who are you ?

*Ped.* Nay, how should I know ?

*Adm.* But are you one of my people ?

*Ped.* Yes, if you like it. As said Lord Somebody, who neither serv'd king, man, nor God, but who entering the palace one day at supper-time, and seeing all the chamberlains at work without their coats, whips off his, and begins carrying up dishes. Suddenly in comes the major-domo, who perceiving a stranger, asks if he be sworn of the service. "Not yet," says he, "but if swearing is all that's wanted, I'll swear to what you please." So 'tis with me. Make me your servant, and I'll swear and forswear anything.

*Adm.* You are liberal of your humour.

*Ped.* \*'Tis all I have to be liberal of ; and it would not be right to spare that.

*Gil. (within).* Hold on, hold on !

*Leonor.* Who's that ?

*Adm.* Look, some one with erect head and vigorous arms, buffeting the wave before him.

*Leonor.* With another on his shoulders too.

*Adm. (to PEDRO).* Now, would you win an earnest of future favour, plunge in to his assistance.

*Ped.* I would, sir, but I'm a wretched swimmer.

*Leonor.* They have reacht the shore at last.

*Enter GIL PEREZ and ALONSO, drencht.*

*Alon.* Thank Heaven for our escape !

*Gil.* Ah, we're well quit of it.

*Ped.* Now, sir, if I can help. But Lord ha' mercy ! *(Sees GIL.)*

*Adm.* What ! going just when you are wanted ?

*Ped.* I was born, my lord, with a tender heart ; that seeing these poor fellows so drencht, bleeds for them. That he should pursue me even to Portugal ! *(Is creeping away.)*

*Adm.* What ! only just come, and going ?

*Ped.* Oh, my lord, a sudden call. Excuse me.

*[Exit.*

*Adm.* 'Tis an idiot. But let me help you.

*Alon.* My life is in your hand.

*Adm.* In my hand ? How is that ?

*Alon.* You shall hear, if I may first know to whom I tell my story. Misfortune forces me to be cautious.

*Adm.* You are right ; but need fear nothing from the Lord High Admiral of Portugal, who now speaks to you, and pledges himself to protect you so long as you stand on his estate.

*Alon.* Enough, my lord.

My name is Don Alonso de Tordoya,  
Not un-illustrious in Spain. I love  
A noble lady ; whom going to visit,  
When this same westering sun was young in heav'n,  
I found a rival with her. I rush'd out,  
Bidding him follow with his sword ; he follow'd ;  
We fought, and with two passes in his side  
I left him dead : the cry was after us ;  
The officers of justice at my heels.  
No time to lose ; I leap'd upon a horse,  
And rode, until a shot, aim'd at his rider,  
Kill'd him ; then, taking to my feet, fled on,  
Till, coming to a country house, I saw,  
To my great joy, my friend—

*Gil.* •

Here enter I ;

Who, seeing Don Alonso so hard set,

Offer'd my services to keep them back  
Till he was safe in Portugal.  
That country house of mine—a pleasure house  
Some call it, though I've found but little there—  
Stands in a narrow mountain gorge, through which  
He and the bloodhounds after him must pass  
To reach the river ; as he says, he came,  
And saw, and fled ; had scarce got fifty yards,  
Up comes the Sheriff with his yelling pack  
Panting and blowing. First most courteously  
I begg'd them spare themselves as well as him  
Further pursuit, but all in vain ; push on  
They would ; whereon I was oblig'd to draw ;  
Disabled four or five, Heav'n help their souls !  
Till, having done as much as he to figure  
In justice's black book, like him I fled  
After him to the river ; where on finding  
The bridge occupied by the enemy,  
Catching my sword between my teeth, and him  
Upon my shoulders, I so dash'd in,  
And, at last, over ; where now, thanks to Heav'n,  
We meet your Excellency, who vouchsafes  
Your shelter and protection.

*Adm.* 'Twas my word,  
And I'll abide by't.

*Alon.* I have need  
Of all assurance, for the man I slew  
Was of great note.

*Adm.* His name ?

*Alon.* Prefacing that he was a cavalier  
Of wholly noble parts and estimation,  
And that 'tis no disparagement to valour  
To be unfortunate, I may repeat it,—  
Don Diego d'Alvarado.

*Adm.* Wretched man !  
My' cousin ! you have slain him !

*Leonor.* You have slain  
My brother, traitor !

*Gil.* Oh, I see my sword  
Must e'en be out again.

*Alon.* Your Excellency  
Will pause before he draws his sword on one  
Surrender'd at his feet. My lord, remember  
I slew Don Diego in the face of day,  
In fair and open duel. And, beside,  
Is not your Excellency's honour pledg'd  
To my security?

*Gil.* Beside all which,  
I say that if all Portugal, and all  
Within it, admiralty and army too,



Combine, you shall not touch him while I live.

*Adm.* I know not what to do ; upon one side  
My promise, on the other the just call  
Of retribution for my kinsman's death.  
I must adjudge between them. Don Alonso,  
The word of Honour is inviolable,  
But not less so her universal law.  
So long as you stand upon ground of mine  
I hold your person sacred : for so far  
My promise holds ; but set your foot beyond  
E'en but an inch—remember, death awaits you.  
And so farewell.

*Leonor.* Nay, hold ! though you have pledged  
Your promise—

*Adm.* What I pledge is pledg'd for you,  
As for myself ; content you.

[*Exeunt ADMIRAL and LEONOR.*]

*Alon.* Well, friend Gil,  
What say you to all this ?

*Gil.* Why then, I say,  
At least 'tis better than it was. To-day  
The mouse, shut in the cupboard, there must stay :  
But will jump out to-morrow—if she may.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Wood near San Lucar in Andalusia.*—

*Enter MANUEL and JUANA as travelling.*

*Man.* Misfortune on misfortune !

*Jua.* Ay, they call

One to another.

*Man.* Ah, my love !

That you should wander thus about with me  
And find no home ! Galicia, that I thought  
Should be our port, unkindly storm'd us out  
To Salvatierra, whence before the gale  
We drive to Andalusia.

*Jua.* Manuel,

My home is ever where you are.

*Man.* Oh how

Requite such love ! but you shall rest awhile  
Till I and the poor fellow we pick'd up  
Have found fit resting-place in San Lucar.  
Pedro !

*Enter PEDRO.*

*Ped.* Sir !

*Man.* • Come you with me ;  
While you, Juana, underneath those trees—

C.

P

*Jua.* Weep your departure. [Exit JUANA.]

*Man.* It shall not be long.

Although her grief blindly anticipates  
A longer separation than she knows !

*Ped.* Alas, and how is that ? and how can you  
Foredoom such pain to one who loves you so ?  
Pardon me who am but your servant, sir,  
And that but these two days, for saying it.

*Man.* Ah, Pedro, 'tis not I who wills all this,  
But fate ; that, stronger than all human will,  
Drove me from Portugal to Galicia,  
Thence hither ; where my fate still urging on,  
I must to sea, joining the armament  
That sails to plant the banner of the church  
Over the golden turrets of the north :  
Leaving my lady—not, as you surmise,  
Deserted and dishonour'd here behind,  
But in some holy house at San Lucar,  
With all the little substance I possess,  
Till I return. For to a soldier  
His sword is property enough. (Drums within.)

*Ped.* And hark  
The drum that answers you—

*Man.* No doubt a troop  
Recruiting for this war.

*Ped.* See, they are coming.

*Man.* I'll take occasion by the forelock then.

Pedro, go, tell the Ensign of the troop  
Two men would join his ranks. I'll to Juana. [*Exit.*

*Enter GIL PEREZ with soldiers.*

*Ped.* This one looks affable. Pray, sir, can you  
courteously inform me which is the Ensign ?

*Soldier.* There—he with the red sash.

*Ped.* What, he with the lofty presence and broad  
shoulders ?

*Soldier.* Ay !

*Gil (to the soldiers).* Well then, my lads, we shall  
agree together very well, eh ?

*Soldiers.* Long live our noble Ensign !

[*Exeunt soldiers.*

*Ped.* Now's the time !

*Gil (to himself).* 'Fore heaven, this soldiering  
would be pleasant enough did not that trouble follow  
and plague me.

*Ped.* Sir !

*Gil.* Leaving Isabel at such a risk—

*Ped.* Sir Ensign !

*Gil.* That as fast as I gain honour here I run the  
chance of losing more at home.

*Ped.* Noble Sir Ensign !

*Gil.* One good thing, however, my good Manuel keeps guard for me.

*Ped.* He must surely be deaf this side—I'll try the other. Noble Ensign !

*Gil (turning round).* Who is that ?

*Ped. (recognising him gradually).* A soldier—no, I only mean one who would be—no soldier. If I said I wish'd to be a soldier, sir, I lied.

*Gil.* Rascal ! you here ? did I not warn you whenever and wherever—

*Ped.* Oh yes, yes, but how should I ever expect to find you here a soldiering ?

*Gil (setting upon him).* I'll teach you I *am* here, scoundrel, to whom I owe half my trouble.

*Ped.* Help ! murder ! help !

*Enter MANUEL.*

*Man.* A soldier set upon my servant ! stop, sir ! how do you dare—Gil Perez !

*Gil.* Manuel !

*Man.* Why, did I not leave you in Portugal ?

*Gil.* And I you at Salvatierra, engaged to me by solemn promise and old love to guard my honour there ?

*Man.* We both have cause for wonder. I will tell you all ; but first we must be alone.

*Gil.* Ay, another wonder ; this fellow yours ?

*Man.* In travelling hither we found him by the way, and took him.

*Gil.* Well, this saves your life for this time, sir : but, remember, you will not always have a friend at hand to do so much for you.

*Ped.* I know that ; I only wish you would be so gracious as to tell me where you are next bound, that I may take good care not to go thither. But I know one place at least to which you cannot follow me—my own estate—and thither I set off immediately.

[*Exit.*

*Gil.* We are alone. Come, I will tell you first  
My story. As you say you saw us last,  
Alonso and myself, in Portugal ;  
Such an escape as (so the wise men say)  
Is from the frying-pan into the fire.  
We landing from the river on the estate  
Of that great potentate the High Admiral,  
Whose cousin, it turn'd out, was the very man  
Alonso slew ; whereat the Admiral,  
Who had, before he knew this, promis'd us  
Protection, gave us truly such protection

As the cat gives the mouse that she thinks safe  
 Under her paw. But we escap'd from her,  
 And after much adventures came at last  
 To San Lucar here, where the Duke, who now  
 Is general of the war that our good king  
 Wages with England, courteously receiv'd us ;  
 Gave Don Alonso a regiment ; made me  
 An Ensign in it as you see ; enough—  
 I know you will not wish a longer story  
 From one whose heart, until you tell him yours,  
 Hangs from a hair.

*Man.* To take the story up then  
 Where you did, Perez—scarcely had you plung'd  
 Into the river, than the sheriff's rout  
 Came after you ; but, seeing all was lost,  
 Went angry to their homes, and I to yours ;  
 Where I receiv'd such hospitality  
 As our old friendship—But I falter here,  
 Scarce knowing how to tell—  
 Nay, almost doubting if to tell at all,  
 Or to conceal, what to conceal and tell  
 At once were best. You made me promise, Gil,  
 At parting—yea, with those last words hard wrung  
 Out of your breathless struggle with the flood—  
 That I would watch the honour of your house.

I did so : and it is because I did so  
That I was forc'd to leave it.

*Gil.* Manuel,  
Your words are slaying me by syllables.  
But tell me all—How was't ?

*Man.* One Juan Baptista  
Court'd your sister.

*Gil.* Well ?

*Man.* And came at last  
To such a boldness, that one night he stole  
Into the house.

*Gil.* Manuel !

*Man.* I, who was watching,  
Ran from my chamber, found a muffled man ;  
'Threw myself on him ; he, alerter yet,  
Leap'd from the window, and I after him  
Into the street, where two he'd posted there  
Came to his rescue ; one of them I slew,  
The other wounded, while the rogue himself  
Fled and escap'd. What could I do, my friend,  
A foreigner, charg'd with a homicide  
In a strange country, with Juana too  
Involv'd with me ? If I were wrong to fly,  
I did so thinking how yourself would act  
In a like case.



*Gil.* 'Tis true, I cannot blame you.  
 Ah ! he said truer may be than he meant,  
 Who liken'd a true friend to a true mirror,  
 That shows one all oneself indeed, but all  
 Revers'd ; that when I look into your breast  
 To see my honour, I but see disgrace  
 Reflected there. I must begone at once  
 To Salvatierra ; for to leave my name  
 In danger is to let it run to shame.

*Enter ALONSO.*

Oh, Don Alonso, you are come in time.  
 If aught that I have ever done for you  
 Deserve return, requite me, I beseech you,  
 By giving Manuel here the Ensigncy  
 I must throw up.

*Alon.* But why ?

*Gil.* I must at once  
 To Salvatierra, where my honour lies  
 In the utmost peril.

*Alon.* But—

*Gil.* I am resolv'd.

*Alon.* I fain might try dissuade you, but I know  
 Your honour will not call in vain. Enough :

Be't as you will—on one condition.

*Gil.*

Well ?

*Alon.* That I may go with you, and share your risk,  
Who more than shar'd, and conquer'd mine.

*Man.*

Nay, sir,

If any one do that it must be I,  
His older friend, who bringing this ill news  
Must see him safely through it.

*Alon.*

But 'twas I

Who drew him from his home, where, till I came,  
He liv'd in peace and quiet, but where now  
This outrage has grown up in his forc'd absence.  
And surely, the world over, 'tis ill manners  
For one who, having drawn a friend from home,  
Lets him return alone.

*Man.*

Well, be you courteous,

I'll not be cowardly.

*Gil.*

Oh, this rivalry

Proves the nobility of both ! But, friends,  
Neither must go with me ; you both are here  
Fled in like peril of your lives from home,  
And how could I avail me of your love  
At such a price ? Nay, I may want you both  
In greater risks hereafter ; and whom look to,  
If you be lost ?

*Alon.* True, but if one of us  
Went with you now, the other—

*Man.* And that one  
Must be myself.

*Alon.* You see, sir, one *will* go.  
Do you choose which.

*Man.* Content.

*Gil.* How shall I choose,  
When to choose one must needs the other hurt ?  
But if it needs must be—  
I say that Don Alonso, so engag'd  
In high and even holy business here,  
Must not forego't for mine. If one will come,  
Let it be Manuel.

*Alon.* I live to hear  
This insult from your lips ! But I'll have vengeance ;  
Neither shall go unless you take with you  
Thus much at least to compensate  
For what you leave. These jewels may assist you  
Where my sword cannot. (*Giving jewels.*)

*Gil.* I accept them, sir,  
As freely as they're given. Come, embrace me.  
And now to punish an unworthy sister,  
And that ill traitor, from whose heart I swear  
My bleeding honour with this sword to tear.

SCENE II. *Outside GIL PEREZ's House at Salvatierra ;  
as in ACT I. SCENE I.—Enter ISABEL and CASILDA.*

*Isab.* What ! Donna Leonor d'Alvarado, come to Salvatierra ?

*Cas.* Yes.

*Isab.* And for what purpose ?

*Cas.* They say, to avenge her brother's death. I myself have seen her conferring with Juan Baptista.

*Isab.* And what do you infer from that ?

*Cas.* He is, they say, chief witness against Don Alonso and your brother, for this murder.

*Isab.* Against my brother too ! O Casilda, is it not shameful that Juan Baptista should revenge with slanders behind my brother's back whom he dares not meet face to face ! Nay, that a traitor be revenged at all on him he has betrayed ! thriving here at home while my brother is banisht !

*Cas.* But there's something else. He charges your brother's friend Manuel with murdering his men.

*Isab.* In proving which, my honour must be publicly canvassed and compromised !

*Enter PEDRO.*

*Ped.* Oh, what a long way it has seemed ; as it will

when fear fetters one's legs. Oh, permit me, madam, since fate has sent me back to your feet, to kiss but the little toe, the pink, the pearl, the petty Benjamin of those ten toes. But above all, tell me, for Heaven's sake, is my master here ?

*Isab.* No, Pedro, you at least are safe. He, alas, is far away.

*Ped.* So one might think ; but yet on the other hand I'd swear he must be here.

*Isab.* Pedro !

*Ped.* Oh yes, his sole vocation now is to dodge my steps like some avenging ghost of *Capa and Espada*.

*Enter JUAN BAPTISTA.*

*Bapt. (speaking to himself).* If they condemn him  
To death, as, on my evidence alone,  
They must, he'll not return to plague me more  
At Salvatierra. But, fair Isabel,  
How blest am I on whom the star of beauty,  
Bright rival of the sun,  
Beams out such rays of love !

*Isab.* Stand off ! Away !  
Not rays of love, whatever heretofore  
I and my beauty may have beam'd, Baptista,

But now, if rays at all, lightnings of rage  
And indignation from my heart and eyes.  
Approach them at your peril ! What, false traitor,  
You come to court me with my brother's blood  
Upon you, shed too in no manly duel,  
Face to face, hand to hand, in the open field,  
But like a murderer,  
Behind his back stabbing him dead with slander—  
Never ! [Exit.

*Bapt.* But, Isabel !

*Cas.* Your day is over. [Exit.

*Bapt.* And that I should lose her by the very  
means I hoped to win her with !

*Ped.* Let not this prevent your memory acknowledging one who has suffered banishment, and lives in terror of his life, on your account.

*Bapt.* Pedro !

*Ped.* And at your service.

*Bapt.* Ah, would you were !

*Ped.* Try me.

*Bapt.* But are you still Isabel's servant ?

*Ped.* I trust so.

*Bapt.* Oh, good Pedro, I would fain explain to her, and wipe out (as I easily can) the offence she has taken against me ; and if you will but be my friend,

and leave the door ajar to-night, that I may tell her the whole story, I'll pay you well for it.

*Ped.* Well, I think there can be no danger in that. Why, if you should happen to call loudly outside the door to-night, and I let you in, forgetting to ask who it is—surely I shall not be to blame?

*Bapt.* 'Tis well; the sun is already setting; go you to your post, and I shall be at mine immediately.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III. *A Room in GIL PEREZ's House.*—*Enter*  
ISABEL *and* CASILDA.

*Isab.* Casilda, now the flaming sun has set,  
See to the doors; and you and Inez there  
Sing to me—'twill beguile my melancholy.  
No merry song, however; something sad  
As my own fancies. (*They sing within.*)

Hark! what noise is that?  
One calling at the door at such an hour!—  
Again!—Bid Pedro see—  
Why, what is it that makes me tremble so?  
From head to foot—

*Enter PEDRO hurriedly.*

*Ped.* O madam!

*Isab.* Well ?

*Ped.* O madam—

Opening the door—only to ask—a man  
All muffled up ran by me—(*Aside.*) 'Tis all right.

*Enter GIL PEREZ, cloakt.*

*Isab.* Who's this ?

*Gil.* (*discovering himself*). I, Isabel.

*Isab.* Oh heavens !

*Gil.* Well, sister,

What troubles you ?

*Ped.* Oh Lord, oh Lord, oh Lord ! (*Hides.*)

*Isab.* O Gil, how have you dared to venture here,  
Your very life at stake !

*Gil.* Small risk to one  
Whom your ill doings have half kill'd already.

*Isab.* I do not understand you—

*Gil.* You need not :

I come not to explain, but to avenge ;  
And, mark my words, what I have come to do,  
I'll do.

*Isab.* Alas ! is it my fault then, brother,  
That traitors of their gold can make them wings  
To fly into my house ?

*Gil.* Be not afraid ;



I shall not judge of you or any one  
Unheard, as others seem to judge of me.  
What is the matter ?

*Isab.* Nay, I only know  
You are accus'd of aiding, how I know not,  
In Don Diego's death—on evidence,  
As 'tis believ'd, the Judge (who now is here, .  
Inflam'd by Donna Leonor) declares  
Sufficient to convict you of your life  
And property—Alas, alas, my brother !

*Gil.* You shall away with me ; for 'tis not well  
To leave you here alone and unprotected.  
But I must see first what this Judge has got  
To say against me.

*Isab.* But how get at it ?

*Gil.* Why from the fountain-head. But, by the  
Lord,  
If I must fly or die for't,  
I'll not do so for nothing, I'll begin  
My vengeance on this rascal. (*Pulling out PEDRO.*)

*Ped.* Oh begin  
On some one else and sum up all on me !

*Gil.* How come you here ?

*Ped.* Oh, I will tell the truth  
And nothing but the truth.

*Gil.* Well !

*Ped.* Being assur'd

That you were coming hither—

*Gil.* Well ?

*Ped.* I came

Before.

*Gil.* And why, when—

*Ped.* That by doing so

You should not see my face, (which you declar'd,

Seeing again, you'd kill me,) but my back,

Which as you never swore at—

*Gil. (striking him).* Villain, die !

*Ped. (falling as dead).* Oh ! I am slain !

*Gil.* Come, Isabel, 'tis I

Must bear you on my shoulders through the flames

That rise all round. [Exeunt GIL and ISABEL.

*Ped. (rising).* Oh, angel of sham death,

How much I owe your out-spread wings to-day,

Under whose shadow—Yo escapare. [Exit.

SCENE IV. *An open Gallery in the Judge's House at Salvatierra.—Enter Judge, and attendants, with lights, &c.*

*Judge.* • Here in this gallery where the air is cool  
Set out my desk and papers.

I must examine all these depositions.

*1st Attendant.* 'Tis done, my lord.

*2nd Attendant.* My lord, a stranger asks  
Admittance—upon something, as he says,  
Important to the matter now in hand.

*Judge.* Admit him, then.

*Gil. (without).* Manuel, keep the door ;  
And, till my lord and I have had our talk,  
Let no one enter.

*Man. (without).* Trust me.

*Enter GIL.*

*Gil.* First permit me  
To kiss your lordship's hand. And secondly,  
Having important matter to disclose  
About this business, I would tell it you  
Alone—

*Judge (to attendants).* Retire ! [*Exeunt attendants.*

*Gil.* And with your lordship's leave  
Will take a chair.

*Judge.* Sit, sir.

*Gil.* May I presume  
To ask your lordship how Galicia  
Agrees with you ?

*Judge.* I thank you, very well.

*Gil.* I'm very glad of that. Humph—as I take it,  
Your lordship is come down into these parts  
On a great trial ?

*Judge.* Yes, the case is this ;  
A certain Don Alonso de Tordoya,  
And one Gil Perez of this place, are charg'd  
With slaying Don Diego d'Alvarado.

*Gil.* Slaying ?

*Judge.* In duel, sir.

*Gil.* I marvel much  
'They should have dragg'd your lordship from the city  
And from the court that you so much adorn,  
Into this beggarly place, to try a cause  
'That happens almost every day in Spain.

*Judge.* True, sir, but this is not by any means  
The whole, or kernel, of the case. These men,  
Beside, and after, the said homicide,  
Resisted the king's officers ; this Perez  
Especially—a notable ruffian  
Who lives among these hills a lawless life  
Of violence and murder—struck the Sheriff,  
And—but I'm scarce entitled to say more  
To one whose very name I know not.

*Gil.*

Oh !

My name is quickly told, if that be all.

*Judge.* What is it then ?

*Gil.* Gil Perez.

*Judge.* Ho ! without !

*Man. (appearing at the door).* My lord !

*Judge.* And who are you ?

*Gil.* A friend of mine.

*Man.* Who will take care that no one else comes in,  
Till you have done. [*Exit.*

*Gil.* Your lordship sees how 'tis—  
Be not alarm'd—pray take your chair again—  
I've much to say to you.

*Judge (aside).* Better submit.  
This desperate man may have a score beside—  
Well, sir, your business with me ?

*Gil.* Why, my lord,  
I for these many days have been, so please you,  
Away from home ; suddenly coming back,  
My friends here tell me of a mortal suit  
Your lordship has against me ; when I ask  
For the particulars, some say one thing,  
And some another. I, who naturally  
Am somewhat interested in the truth,  
Think it the wisest course to come at once  
Straight to head-quarters.

*Judge.* This is strange proceeding.

*Gil.* Oh, if your lordship scruple telling me,  
These papers will not. I'd not for the world  
Annoy your lordship. (*Takes the papers.*)

*Judge.* What are you about, sir !

*Gil.* Conning my brief.

*Judge.* But, sir—

*Gil.* Now pray, my lord,  
Resume your seat ; let me not ask you this  
So very often. (*Reading.*) Ah—the bare indictment  
I know in a rough way, no need read that ;  
But for the evidence. Ah, here it is.  
Humph ; the first witness called, Andrew Ximenes :  
“ Andrew Ximenes, being duly sworn,  
“ Deposeth thus : that he was cutting wood,  
“ When the two gentlemen came out to fight ;  
“ And stood to watch them ; that, after some passes,  
“ Don Diego fell ; and the officers of justice  
“ Then coming up, the other leap'd on horse,  
“ And fled : but being brought to ground by a shot  
“ That kill'd his horse, then ran, until he reach'd  
“ Gil Perez's house,” —here enter I,—“ who first  
“ Courteously ask'd the Sheriff to desist  
“ Hunting the gentleman ; but when the Sheriff  
“ Persisted, drew on him and on his people,

"And fought them back ; but how and when exactly

"The wound was given, deponent cannot say.

"And all this he deposeth upon oath,

"Andrew Ximenes—" And he says the truth ;

Andrew is a good, honourable fellow.

Now for the second, Gil Parrado ; humph.

"Parrado, duly sworn, deposeth thus ;

"That hearing a commotion, he ran out

"And got in time to see"—here enter I—

"Gil Perez fighting with the officers,

"Then on a sudden running to the river

"Plunge in. And that is all he knows of it."

How short and sweet !

"Next and third witness, Juan Baptista,"—ay,

Now for this exemplary Christian —

"Juan Baptista sworn, deposeth thus :

"That, as luck fell, he was behind a tree

"When the two gentlemen came out to fight ;

"That they fought fairly hand to hand, until"—

Here enter I—"Gil Perez suddenly

"Rush'd from a thicket by, and join'd himself

"With Don Alonso, and the two together

"Maliciously and treacherously slew

"Don Diego." Pray, my lord, what is the\*worth

Of such a witness, who himself admits

He stood behind a tree watching two men  
 Set on a third, and slay him, and yet never  
 Ran to his help ? Well—humph—“ And after this,  
 “ Saw Don Alonso jump upon a horse  
 “ And fly, while Perez drew his sword upon  
 “ The officers of justice, and slew one,  
 “ And maim’d another.” Give me leave, my lord,  
 To take this leaf. (*Tears it out.*)

I’ll bring it back to you  
 When I have made this rascal Jew confess  
 (If ever Jews confess) what he *did* see,  
 If any thing ; but fair that if a judge  
 Decide on evidence, that evidence  
 At least be true ; that he should hear moreover  
 Both sides, accus’d as well as his accuser.  
 As to that Sheriff’s wounds—the only count  
 To which I own—I never sought the fray ;  
 The fray sought me, as I stood innocently  
 At my own door ; and pray what man of honour—  
 What would your lordship’s sober self have done  
 In such a case ?

*Judge.* Within ! within there ! ho !  
 Perez himself is here ! the culprit ! Seize him !

*Man. (appearing).* Ay, do, if you can catch him.

*Gil,*

*Manuel,*



Let them come up ; I have no more to say.  
 And you and I, who walked in by the door,  
 Can jump out of the window.

*Voices (within).* Seize him ! Seize him !

*Judge.* One word, Gil Perez ; if you yield at once,  
 I'll be your friend.

*Gil.* I make no friends of lawyers,  
 And never trust their promises.

*Judge.* If not,  
 As sure as Heav'n, I'll bring you to the scaffold.

*Gil.* If you can catch me.

*Judge.* Cannot I ?

*Gil.* Well, try.

*Judge.* Ho there ! upon him ; and if he resist,  
 Cut him down !

*Man.* Now then, Gil !

*Gil.* Now, Manuel !  
 Out with the lights ! or wanting them, we two  
 Will strike them, knaves, in plenty out of you.  
*(Confusion and Mêlée, in which GIL and MANUEL escape.)*

ACT III.

SCENE I. *On a Mountain by Salvatierra.—Enter GIL PEREZ, MANUEL, ISABEL, and JUANA.*

*Gil.* This mountain then, upon whose wrinkled  
edge

The weary moon reclines, must be our fort ;  
Where, in some green and shady spot of it,  
(Hung round with savage, inaccessible rocks,)  
White Isabel and your Juana rest,  
You and I, Manuel, will steal into  
The little village nestled there below,  
And of such travellers as come this way,  
Demand (our own all gone) a scanty living,  
By fair entreaty, not by violence ;  
Until, pursuit giv'n up, we may retreat  
Elsewhere, to live upon what little means  
Injustice leaves us.

*Man.* Gil, 'tis nothing new  
For criminals to hide  
Ev'n where they did the crime, where vengeance least  
Expects to find them, and hunts round in vain.  
And even should they light upon the place,  
Surely we two, back'd by these friendly rocks,

234 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT III

Can keep at bay the rabble that we foil'd  
On level ground.

*Isab.* I have listen'd to you both,  
And take it ill you reckon on yourselves  
Alone ; when I, who though a woman, having yet  
Your blood, Gil Perez, running in my veins,  
And something of your spirit in my heart,  
Am at your side.

*Jua.* And I, who, like a coward,  
Chime in the last ; yet, if with little power,  
With right good will indeed.

*Gil.* Well spoken both !  
But I maintain it as a golden law,  
Women be women ever : keep you quiet,  
And comforting yourselves as best you may,  
While Manuel and I, as becomes men,  
Provide for you in all.

*Isab.* Well, we at least,  
If fit for nothing else, can pray for you.

[*Exeunt ISABEL and JUANA.*

*Gil.* Now they are gone, I want to talk with you  
On a grave matter, Manuel. 'Tis this.  
Among those depositions at the Judge's,  
One rascal, and a rascal too whose gold  
Makes weigh his witness against honesty,

Declar'd on oath he saw me, me, Gil Perez,  
 Abetting Don Alonso treacherously  
 To slay Don Diego.

*Man.* Who was this ?

*Gil.* Why one

Who has not this alone to answer for,  
 As you will know when I name—Juan Baptista.

*Man.* A coward, who, as all such villains do,  
 Flies to the tongue for vengeance, not the sword ;  
 Behind one's back too—

Why, let us go at once, and in broad day  
 Before all eyes, before the very Judge's  
 He lied to, drag the rascal from his house,  
 And make him eat his words in the very place  
 He spit them forth in.

*Gil.* All this we will do,  
 But at some better opportunity,  
 And fitter place. I've heard my grandsire say,  
 " If you begin the fray, why then  
 You must abide the how and when ;  
 But who's drawn into it, I trow,  
 May suit himself with when and how."

But footsteps ! Hark !—  
 Now to commence our calling, as new members  
 Of the most courteous cut-purse company.

*Enter LEONARDO, travelling.*

*Leon. (speaking as he enters).* Lead on the horses,  
Mendo, 'tis so pleasant  
Under the shadow of these wooded rocks,  
I'll walk some way alone.

*Gil.* Your servant, sir.

*Leon.* Sir, God be with you.

*Gil.* 'Travelling all alone ?  
And whither, may I ask ?

*Leon.* To Lisbon, sir.

*Gil.* And whence ?

*Leon.* I started at the break of day  
From Salvatierra.

*Gil.* Ay ? Then you can tell  
What news is stirring there.

*Leon.* Oh nothing, sir.  
Unless perhaps the exploits of a fellow  
The terror of that country ; one Gil Perez,  
I think ; who, when justice was at his heels  
After some crime or other I forget,  
Wounded the Sheriff, kill'd his officer,  
And then was impudent enough to walk  
Into the very Judge's house, and there,  
Before his very eyes, snatch up and read

The depositions drawn up against him.

*Gil.* A very curious story, that !

*Leon.* And then,  
Though half the place was up in arms on him,  
He, and another who is, as I hear,  
Much such another rascal as himself,  
Broke through them all and got away scot free !  
But they are after him.

*Gil.* This is the news ?

*Leon.* All that I know of.

*Gil.* Well—before you go,  
I'll ask you, sir, who by your speech and bearing  
Seem a good fellow. If a friend of yours,  
Came flying for his life, the Philistines  
Close on his heels, and fell before your feet,  
At your own door, exhausted, and beseeching  
Help and protection of you—let me ask  
What would you do ?

*Leon.* What do ? why, give it him.

*Gil.* You would ? and would you, in so doing,  
Deserve the name of rascal for your pains ?

*Leon.* No, certainly.

*Gil.* And when a writ was out  
Against you for so doing, charging you  
With murder, threatening death and confiscation,

Would you be more a rascal for demanding  
Such needful information of the Judge  
As he alone could give of evidence  
Which you suspected, and found false ?

*Leon.*

No, truly.

*Gil.* One question more. If, damn'd by such  
false witness,

You were found guilty, all your property  
Confiscated, yourself condemn'd to die,  
Might not you fly the misdirected sword  
Of justice, and of those who well could spare  
Beg a poor tithe of what she robb'd you wholly,  
And be no rascal still ?

*Leon.*

Oh clearly, clearly.

*Gil.* 'Tis granted then, look to the inference.  
I am Gil Perez ; I who struck the Sheriff,  
And kill'd his man, and read the Judge's papers,  
And flying hither, shorn of house and home,  
Ask you for that of which the law robs me ;  
Which, having plenty, if you will not give,  
By your own free admission I may take,  
And be no rascal still.

*Leon.*

You need not use

My argument against me ; I respect  
And pity you, Gil Perez ; take this chain ;

If it be not enough, I pledge my word  
I'll bring you more hereafter.

*Gil.* All you say  
Tells of a generous heart. But ere I take  
Your present, tell me—do you give it me  
For fear, alone, and in my power, may be,  
Or of good will ?

*Leon.* Good will ! I swear to you,  
Gil Perez, I would even do the same  
Had I a squadron at my side.

*Gil.* As such  
I take it, then. For when my life must pay,  
As soon or late it must, the penalty  
Of hungry vengeance, I shall lay it down  
Contented in my conscience, and report  
That I but took from those who had to give,  
And freely gave ; the only retribution  
My evil star allow'd me.

*Leon.* True enough.  
Is there aught else that I can do for you ?

*Gil.* Nothing.

*Leon.* Farewell—and may a better fate  
Await you.

*Gil.* • Farewell—shall I see you safe  
Over the mountain ?



*Leon.* Not a step—adieu [*Exit.*

*Man.* Sure, never robbery was known to wear  
So fair a face.

*Gil.* Tut, tut, you're not to call it  
Robbery, but preferment, Manuel.  
But who are these ?

*Enter two Farmers.*

*1st Farm.* I tell you I have bought the stock of vines  
Upon his farm.

*2nd Farm.* What, Gil's ?

*1st Farm.* Yes ; sold, you know,  
To pay the costs of prosecution,  
Judges and Alguazils and such ; and I  
Am carrying them the money.

*Man.* Fair game this.

*Gil.* I know him, a near neighbour. Well, friend  
Antony,  
How goes it with you ?

*1st Farm.* What ! Gil Perez ! you !  
When the whole country's after you ?

*Gil.* And if they catch me nobody's the worse  
Except myself. But till they catch and kill me,  
(When I shall want, you know, no more to live on,)  
I've not a stiver ; clipt of the estate

Whose price you carry in your pocket there.  
 Now, I'd not starve ; but, on the other hand,  
 Would not wrong any one to keep me from't :  
 How shall we settle that ?

1st Farm. Oh easily—

Take this—and this (*offers money*)—I had better give  
 it up

At once, for fear. (*Aside.*)

Gil. But do you give me this  
 Of free good will ?

1st Farm. Why as to that, Gil Perez,  
 My will is good to serve you ; but, you see,  
 I am not very rich.

Gil. You mean by that  
 You would not give this money could you help it ?

1st Farm. Why certainly.

Gil. Then keep it and begone  
 In peace.

1st Farm. Gil Perez !

Gil. I'll not have it said  
 " I robb'd—not shamed to beg in my distress.

2nd Farm. And I pray, Gil, and he who likes may  
 hear me,

God keep you from your enemies. I have here  
 Six pieces that my wife knows nothing of ;

242 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT III]

You're welcome.

*Gil.* Not a penny ; go your ways,  
Or night will reach you ere you reach your homes.

[*Exeunt Farmers.*]

*Man.* Gil, while you talk'd with them, I've heard  
a sound  
As of pursuit—listen !—and many too.

*Gil.* Let us up higher then !

*Man.* Beware, the trees  
Will whisper of our whereabouts.

*Gil.* Then here  
Behind the rocks that tell no tales.

*Man.* Quick, quick ! (*They hide.*)

*Enter DONNA LEONOR, JUAN BAPTISTA, Judge,  
Alguazils, &c.*

*Bapt.* Here, madam, till the scorching sun be sunk,  
Tarry awhile.

*Leonor.* My cousin's grievous sickness  
Calls me with all speed homeward.

*Judge.* And as yet  
No vestige of these ruffians, whom to find  
And bring to justice, madam, in your cause,  
I'll peril my own life.

*Gil.* Hist, Manuel !

*Man.* Ay, but speak lower.

*Gil.* When better than now  
Can I avenge Alonso and myself,  
When judge, accus'd, accuser, and false witness,  
Are all together ?

*Man.* Wait awhile.

*Gil.* But—

*Man.* See,  
Fresh comers.

*Gil.* I shall lose the golden moment.

..

*Enter some, dragging along PEDRO.*

*Judge.* A prisoner ?

*1st Man.* One of Gil Perez's knaves, my lord,  
whom we have just now caught creeping over to  
Portugal. The very day Perez swam over there this  
fellow was missed from Salvatierra, and returned on  
the very evening of his return.

*Judge.* Very suspicious indeed.

*Pedro.* Very, my lord, I grant it. Yes, wherever  
I go, to Portugal, Flanders, Germany, China, Japan,  
'tis all the same. I am sure to find him there.

*Judge.* You know then where he is now ?

*Ped.* Oh, doubtless close at hand : he must be, I

being here ; he is such a constant master, that if you put me in prison he'll soon surrender only to follow me there.

*Judge.* Point out the place, then.

*Ped.* Would to Heav'n I could, for were he clapt up safe I'd not follow *him*, I promise you. Indeed, my lord, I live in terror of my life from him.

Flying from him it was I fled from home  
To Portugal ; where the first man I saw  
Was he I thought I'd left at Salvatierra :  
Flying to Andalusia, the first face  
I saw was his I left in Portugal :  
Till, rushing homeward in despair, the man  
I thought I'd left behind in Andalusia,  
Met me at once, and having knockt me down,  
Left me for dead. Well, I got up at last,  
And fled again : but, scarcely got a mile,  
Your people seize me on suspicion  
Of knowing where he hides, and so far justly,  
That carrying me by way of a decoy,  
I'll lay my life he soon were in the trap.

*Judge.* Your folly, or your cunning, sir, shall not mislead us ; tell me where your master is at once, or the wooden horse—

*Ped.* Alas, I'm a bad rider.

*Judge.* Take him to the village and keep him close. By his looks I doubt not, spite of this affected simplicity, he's a desperate ruffian.

*Ped.* I seem such a desperate fellow to him ! Dear me, of the four men here let one depart, and leave three, and one of the three leave two, and one of the two one ; and that one leave half himself ; and that half his half ; and that quarter his half, till it comes to *nil* : it would still be nilly willy with me.

*[Exit guarded by Alguazils.*

*Gil.* Manuel,  
The Alguazils are gone.

*Man.* Now for it then.

*Gil (appearing).* God save this noble company.

*All.* Gil Perez !

*Gil.* Be not alarm'd ; I have but a few words  
To say to one of you, this Juan Baptista.

*Judge.* Holloa ! my guards !

*Man.* Judge, never strain your throat,  
Unless you would be answer'd by such guards  
As waited on you yesterday.

*Judge.* Is this the way that I, and, in my person,  
That justice is insulted ?

*Gil.* • Nay, my lord,  
You least of all should tax a criminal

Who so punctiliously respects yourself,  
 And the realm's Justice in your belly lodg'd,  
 That not to waste you in a vain pursuit,  
 He waits on you himself.

*Judge.* Impudent man !  
 And this before that most illustrious lady  
 Your treachery has render'd brotherless ;  
 And who with daily prayers—

*Gil.* And 'tis for this—  
 That she may hear my vindication  
 Ev'n from the very lips that made the charge,  
 And cease an unjust persecution,  
 Unworthy of her noble name and blood,  
 That I am here. For, madam, if I prove  
 That Don Alonso in fair duel slew  
 Your brother, and without my treacherous help,  
 Or any man's, would you pursue us still ?

*Leonora.* No, sir ; for though the laws of duel are  
 For men alone, I know enough of them  
 To pardon all that was in honour done,  
 Ev'n to my cost. Prove what you say you will,  
 And Don Alonso may take sanctuary  
 In my own house against myself and all.

*Gil.* 'Tis nobly said. On this I take my stand :  
 And since 'tis general and accepted law

That what a witness first shall swear, and then  
 Forswear, stand for no evidence at all,  
 Stand forth, Juan Baptista ;  
 Here is your deposition ; I will read it  
 Before the very Judge you swore it to,  
 And before this great lady, and do you  
 Substantiate or deny it point by point.

*Judge.* Audacity !

*Gil (reading).* In the first place you swear,  
 That, "As luck fell, you were behind a tree  
 "When the two gentlemen came out to fight."  
 Say, is this true ?

*Bapt.* It is.

*Gil.* "And that they fought  
 "Hand to hand fairly, until suddenly  
 "Gil Perez, rushing from a thicket, sided  
 "With Don Alonso." Now, bethink you well ;  
 Is this the truth, Baptista ?

*Bapt.* Yes. I swear it.

*Gil.* Infamous liar ! (*Shoots him with a pistol.*)

*Bapt. (falling).* Heav'n have mercy on me !

*Gil.* My lord, you must another murder add  
 To my black catalogue. Come, Manuel,  
 We must away while we have time. Farewell.

[*Exeunt GIL and MANUEL.*]



248 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT III

*Judge.* By the most sacred person of my king,  
I swear to punish this audacity,  
If it should cost my life.

*Bapt.* Oh, listen, lady ;  
While I have breath to speak. I'm justly slain.  
I tried to swear Gil Perez's life away  
To gain his sister ; he has told you true :  
In fair and open duel, hand to hand,  
Was Don Diego slain. Oh let my death  
Atone for this, and my last dying words  
Attest it. (*Dies.*)

*Enter the Alguazils with PEDRO.*

*Alg.* We heard a pistol, and returned, my lord, to see.

*Judge.* It was Gil Perez ; that is his work. (*Point-  
ing to BAPTISTA.*)

*Ped.* There, said I not the truth ?

*Judge.* He must not escape ; after him ! As to  
this fellow here, who is plainly in his secrets, let two  
Alguazils keep guard upon him here, lest he do further  
mischief ; the rest come with me.

*Ped.* What crime have I committed ? Did I not  
tell you, my lord, he would come, and did he not  
come ?

*Judge.* Peace, traitor ! Come, madam. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Another Pass in the same Mountain—firing and shouting heard ; after which, enter ISABEL and JUANA on a platform of rock above the stage.*

*Isab.* That arquebuss ! of which only the thunder  
Has reach'd us of perhaps some deadly bolt  
On one of those we love !

Why tarry they so long ? What think you, Juana ?

*Jua.* Oh what, but share your fears !

*Isab.* Let us descend,  
And learn the truth at once ; better at once  
To die, than by this torture.

*(As they are about to descend, enter to them suddenly GIL PEREZ and MANUEL.)*

*Gil.* Wait !

*Isab.* My brother !

*Jua.* Manuel !

*Gil.* They are coming ; hide we here ;  
There is no time—

*Enter Judge, LEONOR, Alguazils, &c.*

*Judge.* After them ! after them !

By Heav'n, this mountain-top shall be the scaffold  
 On which the wretch shall expiate his crimes.  
 Two thousand scudi for the man who brings,  
 Dead or alive, Gil Perez !

*Gil (appearing above).* By the Lord,  
 You rate me cheap, my lord ; I'll set you higher—  
 I say four thousand scudi for the Judge,  
 Alive or stuff'd !

*Judge.* There he is ! Fire ! (*Alguazil fires  
 and wounds GIL.*)

*Gil (falling).* God help me !

*Judge.* Yield.

*Gil (struggling).* I've an arm left yet.

*Alg.* He'll fight when dead.

*Judge.* Away with him ! (*Judge and Alguazils  
 carry off GIL.*)

*Man. (struggling with JUANA).* Leave hold of me, I say.

*Jua.* Oh ! Manuel !

*Isab.* Oh ! my brother !

*Man.* Let me go,  
 Or I will dash you headlong with myself. (*He rushes  
 down, ISABEL and JUANA after him.*)

SCENE III. *Same as SCENE I.—PEDRO discovered guarded by two Alguazils.*

*Ped.* Shots and shouting ! They must be at work. Perhaps you gentlemen will wait, while I go and see.

*Alg.* Be quiet, or two bullets—

*Ped.* Oh, one would be enough, thank you. Well, if I mustn't go, will you two gentlemen ? and leave me to wait for you ? I'm quite indifferent.

*Alg.* We leave you not an instant or an inch.

*Ped.* Were ever guards half so polite ! Sure, I must be a holiday to be so strictly kept.

*Alg.* Hark ! They are coming.

*Enter Judge and Alguazils with GIL, a cloak thrown over him.*

*Judge.* Where is the other prisoner ?

*Alg.* Here, my lord.

*Judge.* March on with us.

*Alg. 2.* My lord, this man will faint with loss of blood and weariness.

*Judge.* Halt then, and let him breathe awhile.

• *(They uncover GIL, and PEDRO sees him.)*

*Ped.* I might have guessed it ! Let me be in the

252 GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN [ACT III

bilboes, on the very scaffold, he must be with me : he will die on purpose to lie in the same grave with me, I think !

*Gil.* Whose voice is that ?

*Ped.* Nobody's.

*Gil.* Pedro ? Courage, my poor boy. My day is over. Oh, vanity of mortal strength !

*Judge.* But who are these ?

*Enter DONNA LEONOR, with ISABEL, JUANA, and Servants.*

*Leonor.* I, Donna Leonor, who, falling in  
With these sad ladies, do repent me much,  
That, mis-directed by a lying tongue,  
I have pursued this gentleman—I doubt  
To death—if not, I charge you from this moment  
Leave him at liberty.

*Isab.*

Or else—

*Enter suddenly MANUEL and DON ALONSO, and  
Followers.*

*Alon.*

Or else,

Look to it.

*Gil.* Don Alonso ! whom I thought  
Far off upon the seas ?

*Alon.* And should have been,  
 But when my foot was on the very plank  
 That rock'd upon the foam along the beach,  
 I, who could never get you from my heart,  
 And knew that you had come to peril hither,  
 Could but return once more to him who sav'd  
 My life, though he had wav'd me from his side.  
 Enough ; I am in time. I tell you, sir,  
 Give up this man at once. (*To the Judge.*)

*Judge.* Not for you all !

*Alon.* Then at him and his people !

(*ALONSO, MANUEL, and their people rush on the Judge,  
 Alguazils, &c., disarm them, and beat them out.*)

*Alon.* (*embracing GIL*). My friend is free.

*Gil.* And what first use shall make  
 Of freedom ?

*Ped.* Why, turn Friar ; you can then  
 Be free and easy too, and leave me so.  
 Oh, sir, have I not had enough of terror,  
 Exile, and hunger, to deserve your pardon ?  
 Plead for me, Don Alonso.

*Alon.* "

*Gil*—

*Gil.*

Nay, nay,

What could you seem about to ask of me  
 But granted ere 'twas said ? Go. I forgive you.  
 With which magnanimous forbearance now  
 Gil Percz, the Gallician, makes his bow.

"Thus ends," says Calderon, "the first part of the *bazanas notables* of Luis Perez," whose name I have, for sundry reasons, (and without offence to the hero, I hope,) changed to *Gil*. He was "a notorious robber," says Mr. Ticknor, a kind of Spanish Rob Roy perhaps ; at all events, one whose historical reality is intimated by greater distinctness of character than is usual in these plays. Of such gentry examples are never wanting in Spain, where so little alters to this day ; witness the career of the famous José Maria, quite lately ended ; and who, I read in a book of Travels, was, like Gil, a farmer, for his first calling ; a most merciful robber when he took to his second ; and who performed Gil's feat of confronting, if not a Judge, a Prime Minister in his own den.

Gil perhaps had better have "played his pranks" (as Fuller says of Robin Hood) in prose ; but he was a lawless fellow, and blank verse lay in his way. Those who think his style altogether too heroic for a country robber, will at least find my version more than excused by the original.

THREE JUDGMENTS AT  
A BLOW



## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

PEDRO IV.,	<i>King of Arragon.</i>
DON MENDO TORELLAS,	<i>his Minister.</i>
DONNA VIOLANTE,	<i>Mendo's Daughter.</i>
ELVIRA,	<i>her Maid.</i>
DON LOPE DE URREA.	
DONNA BLANCA,	<i>his Wife.</i>
DON LOPE,	<i>their Son.</i>
BEATRICE,	<i>thei: Servant.</i>
DON GUILLEN,	<i>a Friend of Don Lope's.</i>
VICENTE,	<i>Young Lope's Servant.</i>
ROBBERS, OFFICERS, ROYAL SUITE, &c.	

## THREE JUDGMENTS AT A BLOW

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Mountain Pass near Saragossa. Shot within. Then enter DON MENDO and VIOLANTE pursued by Robbers, among whom is VICENTE.*

**MEN.** Villains, let steel or bullet do their worst,

I'll die ere yield.

*Viol.*

Heav'n help us !

*Robber 1.*

Fool, to strive

Against such odds—upon their own ground too,

Red with the blood of hundreds like yourselves.

*Vic.* Come, sir, no more ado ;

But quietly give my young madam up,

Nice picking for our captain.

*Men.* Not while a drop of blood is in my body.

*Robbers.* Here's at you then !

*Viol.*

My father !

*(As the Robbers attack MENDO, enter DON LOPE.)*

*Lope.* How now ? whom have you here ?

*Vic.* Oh, noble captain,

We found this lady resting from the sun  
Under the trees, with a small retinue,  
Who of course fled.

All but this ancient gentleman, who still  
Holds out against us.

*Lope (to MENDO).* What can you expect  
Against such numbers ?

*Men.* Not my life, but death.

You come in time—

Upon my knees I do beseech of you *(kneels)*  
No other mercy save of instant death  
To *both* of us.

*Lope.* Arise ! you are the first  
Has mov'd me to the mercy you decline.  
'This lady is—your wife ?

*Men.* My only daughter !

*Viol.* In spirit as in blood. If by his death  
You think to make you masters of my life,  
Default of other weapon, with these hands  
I'll cease the breath of life, or down these rocks  
Dash myself headlong.

*Lope.* Lady, calm yourself ;

Your beauty has subdued an angry devil  
One like yourself first rais'd within my soul.  
Your road lies whither, sir ?

*Men.*

To Saragossa.

Where if I could requite—

*Lope.*

Your name ?

*Men.*

Don Mendo

Torellas, after a long embassy  
To Paris, Rome, and Naples, summon'd back  
By Pedro, king of Arragon—with whom  
If't be (as oft) some youthful petulance,  
Calling for justice or revenge at home,  
Drives you abroad to these unlawful courses,  
I pledge my word—

*Lope.*

Alas, sir, I might hail

Your offer could I hope that your deserts,  
However great, might cancel my account  
Of ill-deserving. But indeed my crimes  
Have gather'd so in number, and in weight,  
And condemnation—committed, some of them,  
To stave away the very punishment  
They must increase at last ; others, again,  
In the sheer desperation of forgiveness  
That all had heap'd upon me—

*Men.*

Nay, nay, nay ;

Despair not ; trust to my good offices ;  
In pledge of which here, now, before we part,  
I swear to make your pardon the first boon  
I'll ask for or accept at the king's hand.  
Your name ?

*Lope.*            However desperate, and asham'd  
To tell it, you shall hear it—and my story.  
Retire !                 (*To the Robbers, who exeunt.*)

Don Mendo, I am Lope, son  
Of Lope de Urrea, of some desert,  
At least in virtue of my blood.

*Men.* Indced !  
Urrea and myself were, I assure you,  
Intimate friends of old,—another tie,  
If wanting one, to bind me to your service.

*Lope.* I scarce can hope it, sir ; if I, his son,  
Have so disgrac'd him with my evil ways,  
And so impoverisht him with my expenses,  
Were you his friend, you scarcely can be mine.  
And yet, were I to tell you all, perhaps  
I were not all to blame.

*Men.* Come, tell me all ;  
'Tis fit that I should hear it.

*Viol.* I begin  
To breathe again.

*Lope.* Then listen, sir. My father in his youth,  
As you perhaps may know, but *why* I know not,  
Held off from marriage ; till, bethinking him,  
Or warn'd by others, what a shame it were  
So proud a name should die for want of wearer,  
In his late years he took to wife a lady  
Of blameless reputation, and descent  
As noble as his own, but so unequal  
In years, that she had scarcely told fifteen  
When age his head had whiten'd with such snows  
As froze his better judgment.

*Men.*

Ay, I know

'Too well—too well ! (*Aside.*)

*Lope.*

Long she repell'd his suit,  
Feeling how ill ill-sorted years agree ;  
But, at the last, before her father's will  
She sacrific'd her own. Oh sacrifice  
That little lacks of slaughter ! So, my father  
Averse from wedlock's self, and she from him,  
Think what a wedlock this must be, and what  
The issue that was like to come of it !  
While other sons cement their parents' love,  
My birth made but a wider breach in mine.  
Just in proportion as my mother lov'd  
Her boy, my father hated him—yes, hated,

Even when I was lisping at his knees  
That little language charms all fathers' hearts.  
Neglecting me himself, as I grew up  
He neither taught, nor got me taught, to curb  
A violent nature, which by love or lash  
May even be corrected in a wolf :  
Till, as I grew, and found myself at large,  
Spoilt both by mother's love and father's hate,  
I took to evil company, gave rein  
To every passion as it rose within,  
Wine, dice, and women—what a precipice  
To build the fabric of a life upon !  
Which, when my father  
Saw tottering to its fall, he strove to train  
The tree that he had suffer'd to take root  
In vice, and grow up crooked—all too late !  
Though not revolting to be ruled by him,  
I could not rule myself. And so we liv'd  
Both in one house, but wholly apart in soul,  
Only alike in being equally  
My mother's misery. Alas, my mother !  
My heart is with her still ! Why, think, Don  
Mendo,  
That, would she see me, I must creep at night  
Muffled, a tip-toe, like a thief, to her,

Lest he should know of it ! why, what a thing  
That such a holy face as filial love  
Must wear the mask of theft ! But to sum up  
The story of my sorrows and my sins  
That have made me a criminal, and him  
Almost a beggar ;—  
In the full hey-day of my wilfulness  
There liv'd a lady near, in whom methought  
Those ancient enemies, wit, modesty,  
And beauty, all were reconcil'd ; to her,  
Casting my coarser pleasures in the rear,  
I did devote myself—first with mute signs,  
Which by and by began to breathe in sighs,  
And by and by in passionate words that love  
Toss'd up all shapeless, but all glowing hot,  
Up from my burning bosom, and which first  
Upon her willing ears fell unprov'd,  
Then on her heart, which by degrees they wore  
More than I us'd to say her senseless threshold  
Wore by the nightly pressure of my feet.  
She heard my story, pitied me  
With her sweet eyes ; and my unruly passion,  
Flusht with the promise of first victory,  
Push'd headlong to the last ; not knowing, fool !  
How in love's world the shadow of disappointment



Exactly dogs the substance of success.  
In fine, one night I stole into her house,  
Into her chamber ; and with every vow  
Of marriage on my tongue ; as easy then  
To utter, as thereafter to forswear,  
When in the very jewel I coveted  
Very compliance seem'd to make a flaw  
That made me careless of it when possess'd.  
From day to day I put our marriage off  
With false pretence, which she at last suspecting,  
Falsely continued seeming to believe,  
Till she had got a brother to her side,  
(A desperate man then out-law'd, like myself,  
For homicide,) who, to avenge her shame,  
With other two waylaid me on a night  
When as before I unsuspectingly  
Crept to her house ; and set upon me so,  
All three at once, I just had time to parry  
Their thrusts, and draw a pistol, which till then  
They had not seen, when—  
*Voices (within).* Fly ! Away ! Away !

*Enter VICENTE.*

*Lope.* What is the matter now ?

*Vic.* Captain !

*Lope.*

Well, speak.

*Vic.* We must be off ; the lady's retinue  
Who fled have rous'd the soldiery, and with them  
Are close upon our heels. We've not a moment.*Lope.* Then up the mountain !*Men.*

Whither I will see

They shall not follow you ; and take my word  
I'll not forget my promise.*Lope.*

I accept it.

*Men.* Only, before we part, give me some token,  
The messenger I send may travel with  
Safe through your people's hands.*Lope* (*giving a dagger*).

This then.

*Men.*

A dagger ?

An evil-omen'd pass-word.

*Lope.*

Ah, Don Mendo,

What has a wretched robber got to give  
Unless some implement of death ! And see,  
The wicked weapon cannot reach your hand,  
But it must bite its master's. (*His hand bleeding.*)  
Ill-omen'd as you say !*Voices* (*within*).

Away ! Away !

*Vic.*

They're close upon us !

*Viol.* O quick ! begone ! My life hangs on a thread  
While yours is in this peril.

*Lope.* That alone  
Should make me fly to save it. Farewell, lady.  
Farewell, Don Mendo.

*Men and Viol.* Farewell !

*Lope.* What strange things  
One sun between his rise and setting brings ! [*Exit.*

*Men.* Let us anticipate, and so detain  
The soldiers. That one turn of Fortune's wheel  
Years of half-buried memory should reveal !

*Viol.* Could I believe that crime should ever be  
So amiable ! How fancy with us plays,  
And with one touch colours our future days !

[*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE II. *An Audience Hall in the Palace of PEDRO,  
King of Arragon.—Enter DON LOPE DE URREA,  
and DON GUILLEI'.*

*Guil.* Such bosom friends, sir, as from infancy  
Your son and I have been, I were asham'd,  
You being in such trouble, not to offer  
My help and consolation. Tell me aught  
That I can serve you in.

*Urr.* Believe me, sir, •  
My heart most deeply thanks your courtesy.

When came you to the city ?

*Guil.* Yesterday,

From Naples.

*Urr.* Naples ?

*Guil.* To advance a suit

I have in Arragon.

*Urr.* I too am here

For some such purpose ; to beseech the king

A boon I doubt that he will never grant.

*Guil.* Ev'n now his Highness comes.

*Enter King PEDRO and Train.*

*Urr.* So please your Majesty, listen to one,  
Of whom already you have largely heard—  
Don Lope de Urrea.

*King.* Oh ! Don Lope !

*Urr.* I come not hither to repeat in words  
The purport of so many past petitions,  
My sorrows now put on a better face  
Before your Highness' presence. I beseech you  
To hear me patiently.

*King.* Speak, Urrea, speak !

*Urr.* Speak if I can, whose sorrow rising still  
Clouds its own utterance. My liege, my son,

Don Lope, lov'd a lady here ; seduc'd her  
By no feign'd vows of marriage, but compell'd  
By me, who would not listen to a suit  
Without my leave contracted, put it off  
From day to day, until the lady, tired  
Of a delay that argued treachery,  
Engag'd her brother in the quarrel ; who  
With two companions set upon my son  
One night to murder him. The lad, whose mettle  
Would never brook affront, nor car'd for odds,  
Drew on all three ; slew one—a homicide  
That nature's common law of self-defence  
Permits. The others fled, and set on him  
The officers of justice, one of whom  
In his escape he struck—  
A self-defence against your laws I own  
Not so to be excus'd—then fled himself  
Up to the mountains. I must needs confess  
He better had deserv'd an after-pardon  
By lawful service in your camp abroad  
Than aggravating old offence at home,  
By lawless plunder ; but your Highness knows  
It is an ancient law of honour here  
In Arragon, that none of noble blood  
In mortal quarrel quit his native ground.

But to return. 'The woman, twice aggriev'd,  
Her honour and her brother lost at once,  
(For him it was my son slew of the three,)  
Now seeks to bring her sorrows into port :  
And pitying my grey hairs and misery,  
Consents to acquit my son on either count,  
Providing I supply her wherewithal  
'To hide her shame within some holy house ;  
Which, straiten'd as I am, (that, by my troth,  
I scarce, my liege, can find my daily bread,)  
I have engag'd to do ; not only this,  
But, in addition to the sum in hand,  
A yearly income—which to do, I now  
Am crept into my house's poorest rooms,  
And, (to such straits may come nobility !)  
Have let for hire what should become my rank  
And dignity to an old friend, Don Mendo  
Torellas, who I hear returns to-day  
To Saragossa. It remains, my liege,  
That, being by the plaintiff's self absolv'd,  
My son your royal pardon only needs ;  
Which if not he nor I merit ourselves,  
Yet let the merits of a long ancestry,  
Who swell your glorious annals with their names  
Writ in their blood, plead for us not in vain ;

Pity the snows of age that misery  
Now thaws in torrents from my eyes ; yet more,  
Pity a noble lady—my wife—his mother—  
Who sits bow'd down with sorrow and disgrace  
In her starv'd house.

*King.* This is a case, Don Lope,  
For my Chief Justice, not for me.

*Urr.* Alas !  
How little hope has he who, looking up  
To dove-ey'd mercy, sees but in her place  
Severely-sworded justice !

*King.* Is't not fit  
That the tribunal which arraign'd the crime  
Pronounce the pardon also ?

*Urr.* Were it so,  
I know not where to look for that tribunal,  
Or only find it speechless, since the death  
Of Don Alfonso.

*King.* His successor's name  
This day will be announc'd to Arragon.

*Urr.* Yet let a father's tears—

*King.* They might indeed  
The marble heart of justice make to bleed.

[*Exeunt KING, DON GUILLEN, and Train.*]

*Urr.* And thus to satisfy the exigence

Of public estimation, one is forc'd  
To sacrifice entreaty and estate  
For an ill son.

Yet had but this petition been inflam'd  
With love, that love of his had lit in me,  
My prayer had surely prosper'd. But 'tis done,  
Fruitless or not : *well* done, for Blanca's sake ;  
Poor Blanca, though indeed she knows it not,  
And scarcely would believe it—  
But who comes here ?—the friend of better days,  
Don'Mendo ! I would hide me from his eye,  
But, oh indignity, his ancient friend,  
Equal in birth and honour to himself,  
Must now, reduc'd to't by a shameless son,  
Become his tavern-keeper ! For the present  
I may hold back—the King too ! come to meet  
And do him honour.

*Enter, meeting, KING, with Train, and DON MENDO.*

*Men.* My royal master, let me at your feet  
Now and for ever—

*King.* Rise, Don Mendo, rise,  
Chief Justice of all Arragon.

*Men.* • My liege,  
How shall I rise with such a weight of honour



And solemnest responsibility,  
As you have laid upon my neck !

*King.*

'Tis long

Since we have met. How fare you ?

*Men.*

How but well,

On whom your royal favour shines so fair !

*King.* Enough. You must be weary. For to-day  
Go rest yourself, Chief Justice. And to-morrow  
We'll talk together. I have much to tell,  
And much to ask of you.

*Men.*

Your Highness knows

How all my powers are at your sole command,  
And only well employ'd in doing it.

*[Exit KING with Train.]*

*Urr.* If it be true that true nobility  
Slowly forgets what once it has esteem'd,  
I think Don Mendo will not turn away  
From Lope de Urrea.

*Men.*

My old friend !

I must forget myself, as well as honour,  
When I forget the debt I owe your love.

*Urr.* For old acquaintance then I kiss your hand ;  
And on two other counts. First, as your host,  
You know, on your arrival ; be assur'd  
That I shall do my best to entertain you ;

And, secondly, congratulating you  
On your new dignity, which you hardly don  
Before I am your suitor.

*Men.* Oh, Don Lope,  
How gladly shall I serve you !

*Urr.* This memorial  
I had presented to the king, and he  
Referr'd to his Chief Justice.

*Men.* Oh trust to me,  
And to my loyal friendship in the cause.

*Urr.* A son of mine, Don Mendo,—

*Men.* Nay, no more—  
I am appriz'd of all.

*Urr.* I know that men  
Think my heart harden'd toward my only son.  
It might have been so ; not, though, till my son's  
Was flint to me. O Mendo, by his means  
My peace of mind, estate, and good repute  
Are gone for ever !

*Men.* Nay, be comforted :  
I fill a post where friendship well can grant  
What friendship fairly asks. Think from this hour  
That all is ended. Nor for your sake only,  
But for y<sup>o</sup>ur son's ; to whom (you soon shall hear  
The whole strange history) I owe my life,

And sure shall not be slack to save his own.  
All will be well. Come, let us to your house,  
Whither, on coming to salute the king,  
I sent my daughter forward.

*Urr.* I rejoice  
To think how my poor Blanca will rejoice  
To do her honour. You remember Blanca ?

*Men.* Remember her indeed, and shall delight  
To see her once again. (*Aside.*) O lying tongue,  
To say so, when the heart beneath would fain  
We had not met, or might not meet again !

SCENE III. *A Room in URREA's House.—Enter BLANCA  
and VIOLANTE in travelling dress, meeting.*

*Blan.* How happy am I that so fair 'a guest  
Honours my house by making it her own,  
And me her servant !  
To welcome and to wait on Violante  
I have thus far intruded.

*Viol.* Nay, Donna Blanca,  
Mine is the honour and the happiness,  
Who, coming thus to Arragon a stranger,  
Find such a home and hostess. Pardon me  
That I detain you in this ante-room,

My own not ready yet.

*Blan.* You come indeed.

Before your people look'd for you.

*Viol.* But not

Before my wishes, lady, I assure you :

Not minding on the mountains to encounter

Another such a risk.

*Blan.* There was a first then ?

*Viol.* So great that I assure you—and too truly,  
(*aside*)—

My heart yet beats with it.

*Blan.* How was't ?

*Viol.* Why, thus :

In wishing to escape the noon-day sun,

That seem'd to make both air and land breathe fire,

I lighted from my litter in a spot

That one might almost think the flowers had chosen

To tourney in, so green and smooth the sward

On which they did oppose their varied crests,

So fortified above with closing leaves,

And all encompass'd by a babbling stream.

There we sat down to rest ; when suddenly

A company of robbers broke upon us,

And would have done their worst, had not as suddenly

A young and gallant gentleman, their captain,

Arrested them, and kindly—but how now ?

Why weep you, Donna Blanca ?

*Blan.* Weeping, yes,

My sorrows with your own—But to your tale.

*Viol.* Nay, why should I pursue it if my trouble  
Awake the memory of yours ?

*Blan.* Your father,  
Saw he this youth, this robber cavalier  
Who grac'd disgrace so handsomely ?

*Viol.* Indeed,  
And owes his life and honour to him.

*Blan.* Oh !  
He had aton'd for many a foregone crime  
By adding that one more ! But I talk wild ;  
Pardon me, Violante.

I have an anguish ever in my breast  
At times will rise, and sting me into madness ;  
Perhaps you will not wonder when you hear  
This robber was my son, my only son,  
Whose wicked ways have driv'n him where he is,  
From home, and law, and love !

*Viol.* Forgive me, lady,  
I mind me now—he told us—  
But I was too confus'd and terrified  
To heed to names. Else credit me—

*Enter URREA and MENDO.*

*Urr.* Largess ! a largess, wife ! for bringing you  
Joy and good fortune to our house, from which  
They have so long been banisht.

*Blan.*

Long indeed !

*Urr.* So long, methinks, that coming all at once  
They make me lose my manners. (*To VIOLANTE.*)

This fair hand

Must, as I think it will, my pardon sign ;  
Inheriting such faculty. Oh, Blanca,  
I must not let one ignorant moment slip—  
You know not half our joy.  
Don Mendo, my old friend, and our now guest,  
Grac'd at the very threshold by the King  
With the Chief-Justiceship of Arragon,  
Points his stern office with an act of mercy,  
By pardoning your Lope—whom we now  
Shall have once more with us, I trust, for ever.  
Oh join with me in thanking him !

*Blan.*

I am glad,

Don Mendo, that we meet under a roof  
Where I can do you honour. For my son,  
I must suppose from what your daughter says,  
You would, without our further prayer or thanks,

Have done as you have done.

*Mend.* Too true—I know—  
And you still better, lady—that, all done,  
I am your debtor still.

*Enter ELVIRA.*

*Elv.* Madam, your room is ready.

*Viol.* May I then  
Retire ?

*Blan.* If I may wait upon you thither.

*Urr.* Nay, nay, 'tis I that as a grey-hair'd page  
Must do that office.

*Mend.* Granted, on condition  
That I may do as much for Donna Blanca. .

*Viol.* As master of the house, I must submit  
Without condition. [*Exeunt VIOLANTE and URREA.*

*Blan.* You were going, sir ?—

*Mend.* To wait upon you, Blanca.

*Blan.* Nay, Don Mendo,  
Least need of that.

*Mend.* Oh, Blanca, Heaven knows  
How much I have desir'd to talk with you !

*Blan.* And to what purpose, sir ?  
No longer in your power—perhaps, nor with—  
'To do as well as talk.

*Mend.* If but to say  
How to my heart it goes seeing you still  
As sad as when I left you years ago.

*Blan.* "As sad?—as when you left me years  
ago"—

I understand you not—am not aware  
I ever saw you till to-day.

*Mend.* Ah, Blanca,  
Have pity!

*Blan.* Nay, Don Mendo, let us cease  
A conversation, uselessly begun,  
To end in nothing. If your memory,  
Out of some dreamt-of fragments of the past,  
Attach to me, the past is dead in time;  
Let it be buried in oblivion.

*Mend.* Oh, with what courage, Blanca, do you  
wield  
Your ready woman's wit!

*Blan.* I know not why  
You should say that.

*Mend.* But *I* know.

*Blan.* If't be so,  
Agree with me to say no more of it.

*Mend.* But how?

*Blan.* By simple silence.



*Mend.* How be silent  
Under such pain ?  
*Blan.* By simple suffering.  
*Mend.* Oh, Blanca, how learn that ?  
*Blan.* Of me—and thus.  
Beatrice !

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* Madam ?  
*Blan.* Light Don Mendo to  
His chamber. Thus be further trouble sped.  
*Mend.* Nay, rather coals of fire heap'd on my  
head ! *[Exeunt severally.]*

---

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Room in Urrea's House.—Enter URREA  
and BLANCA on one side, and LOPE and VICENTE on  
the other.*

*Lope.* Thrice blessed be the day, that brings me  
back  
In all humility and love, my father,  
To kiss your feet once more.

*Urr.* Rise up, my son,  
As welcome to your parents as long lookt for.  
Rise and embrace me.

*Lope.* Till I have your hand  
I scarcely dare.

*Urr.* Then take it, Lope—there—  
And may God make thee virtuous as thy father  
Can pray for thee. Thy mother too—

*Lope.* O madam,  
I scarcely dare with anguish and repentance  
Lift up my eyes to those I have made weep  
So many bitter tears—

*Blan.* You see, my son,  
You keep them weeping still—not bitter tears,  
But tears of joy—Oh, welcome home again !

*Vic.* Where is there any room for a poor devil  
Who has done penance upon rock and water  
This many a day, and much repents him of  
His former sins ?

*Urr.* What you alive too ?

*Vic.* Yes, sir,  
This saddle's pad, (*showing LOPE,*) or, if you like, the  
beast  
That bears the saddle—or, by another rule,—  
That where the cat jumps also goes her tail.

*Lope (to his father).* You see, sir, in such godly company  
I must repent.

*Vic.* Why, devil take't—

*Urr.* What, swearing?

*Vic.* But some poor relic of our former life  
That yet will stick. Madam, permit me,  
If not to kiss your hand, nor ev'n your feet,  
At least the happy ground on which they walk.

*Blan.* Rise, rise. How can I less than welcome  
one  
Who has so loyally stood by my son,  
Through evil and through good.

*Vic.* A monument  
As one might say, madam, *ad perpetuam*  
*Fidelis Amicitiae Memoriam.*

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* What! is my master home? Then, by  
the saints,  
Saving your presence, and before your faces,  
I must embrace him.

*Lope.* Thanks, good Beatrice.

*Urr.* You see how all rejoice to see you, Lope,  
But none so more than I; believe 't. But now

'Tis time you wait on Mendo, and acknowledge  
The kindness he has done us. See, Beatrice,  
If he be in his room, or busy there. [*Exit BEATRICE.*  
Meanwhile, my son, I crave one patient hearing  
To what I have to say.

*Vic.*

Now for a lecture.

*Lope.* Silence, sir ! Coming here, we must expect  
And bear such things. Pray speak, sir.

*Urr.*

You see, Lope,

(And doubtless must have heard of it before,)  
In what a plight we are : my property,  
What yet remains of it, embroil'd and hamper'd,  
And all so little, that this last expense,  
Of getting (as I have) your Estifania,  
Who has already cost us all so much,  
Into a convent ; to do this, I say,  
I have been forc'd to let my house for hire  
To my old friend ; yea, almost, I assure you,  
To beg from door to door. Enough of that.  
'Tis done ; and you are now at last restor'd  
To home, and station—wealth I cannot say—  
But all is well that ends well. All I ask,  
(And 'tis with tears and with a broken voice  
I ask it : I would ask it on my knees

If these white hairs forbade not such descent,) That from this day, in pity to us all— Perhaps in gratitude—you would repent Your past excess ; yea, surfeited with that, Would henceforth tame your headlong passions down Into a quiet current. Help me, son, Restore the shaken credit of our house, And show—let us *both* show—that misery Has taught us not in vain. Let us be friends Henceforth ; no rivalry of love or hate Between us ; each doing what in him lies To make what may remain of life to each Happy and honourable. On my part I stake a father's love and tenderness ; And will not you as freely on your side Wager your filial obedience ? Your father asks, implores you. Oh, consider You may not always have a friend in need To rescue you as now : nay, disappoint His mercy and again provoke the laws He now remits, that friend may turn to foe And sacrifice the life he vainly spar'd.

*Vic.* There only wants, “in sæcula sæculorum,”  
To finish off with.

*Lope.*

Sir, I promise you

Amendment, that shall make the past a foil  
To set the future off.

*Enter MENDO.*

*Men.* I come in time  
To vouch fulfilment of so fair a vow.

*Lope.* Oh, sir—

*Men.* I knew you on your road to me ;  
Your errand too ; and thus much have forestall'd  
Of needless courtesy.

*Lope.* Pray God, reward you  
With such advancement in your prince's love  
As envy, the court Hydra, shall not hiss,  
But general love and acclamation  
Write in gold letters in our history,  
For ages and for ages. Sir, your hand !

*Men.* My heart, my heart, you shame me by  
your thanks,  
For service that the veriest churl had paid  
For what you did me, Lope.  
Why, I'm your debtor still. But now, enough !  
I cannot steal more time from business ;  
The king expects me.

*Urr.* • I too must abroad.

*Lope.* Would I could wait on both—but, as it is,

I think my father's self would waive his right,  
In favour of our common benefactor.

*Urr.* Indeed, indeed, I do rejoice you should.

[*Exit with* BLANCA.

*Men.* And I, not knowing if your choice be right,  
Know that I would not lose you for a moment,  
So glad your presence makes me. [*Exit with* LOPE.

*Vic.*<sup>1</sup> Beatrice ! Beatrice !

*Beat.* Well ?

*Vic.* Think you not, now that our principals are  
fairly out of the way, you owe me a kiss on my  
arrival ?

*Beat.* Ay, hot from the oven.

*Vic.* Ah Beatrice ! if you only knew what heart-  
aches you've cost me.

*Beat.* You indeed, robbing and murdering, and I  
don't know what beside, up in the mountains ! and  
then my new madam that's come with you, Donna  
Violante ; with her fine Elvira,—I know, sir, when  
your master was courting his mistress, you—

*Vic.* Now, my own Beatrice, if you could only  
know what you are talking of as well as I, how little  
jealousy could such a creature as that give you !

<sup>1</sup> Vicente's flirtation with the two Criadas, and its upshot, is familiar to English play-goers in the comedy of "The Wonder."

*Beat.* Well—but why ?

*Vic.* Not a woman at all, neither maid nor mermaid—Why, didn't I catch her with all those fine locks of hers clean off her head ?

*Beat.* Clean off her head !

*Vic.* The woman's bald.

*Beat.* Bald !

*Vic.* As my hand ! besides, all that fine white *chevaux-de-frise* that ornaments her gums.

*Beat.* Well ?

*Vic.* All sham.

*Beat.* What, my fine madam there false teeth !

*Vic.* Oh, and half a dozen villainous things I could tell you, did it become a gentleman to tell tales of ladies. But see, here is master coming back.

*Beat.* Good bye then, for the present, Vicente.  
False teeth and a wig ! *[Exit.*

*Enter DON LOPE.*

*Lope.* Vicente, have you by any chance seen Violante ?

*Vic.* Not that I know of, sir ; she may however have passed without my knowing her.

*Lope.* Vicente still ! As if it were possible one who had once seen such beauty could ever forget it.



*Vic.* Why, sir, if her maid Elvira happened to be by her side—

*Lope.* Fool !

*Vic.* Pray is it impossible in the system of things that the maid should be handsomer than the mistress ?

*Lope.* Oh could I but see her !

*Vic.* Take care, take care, sir. Beware of raising the old devil—and now we are but just out of the frying-pan—

*Lope.* Beware *you*, sir ! I tell you I ill liked my father's lecture ; do not you read me another. It were best that no one crossed me, or by heaven !—But who comes here ?

*Vic.* Don Guillen de Azagra.

*Enter DON GUILLEN.*

*Lope.*

What ?

Ask what reward you will of me, Vicente.

Don Guillen de Azagra back again !

*Guil.* And could not wait a moment, hearing you Were also back, Don Lope, till I found you, As well to give you welcome as receive it.

*Lope.* Our old affection asks for nothing less On both sides. Oh, you are welcome !

*Guil.* Well can he come, who comes half dead  
between  
Dead hope and quickening passion !

*Lope.* How is that ?

*Guil.* Why, you remember how three years ago  
I went to Naples—to the wars there ?

*Lope.* Yes,

We parted, I remember, sadly enough  
On both sides, in the Plaza del Asco ;  
Unconsciously divining the sad days  
That were about to dawn on one of us.

*Guil.* Nay, upon both. I am no stranger, Lope,  
To your misfortunes ; and Heav'n knows I felt them !  
But they are over, Heav'n be thank't ! mine yet  
Are sadly acting. You can help me now,  
If not to conquer, to relieve them.

*Lope.* Ay,  
And will strain every nerve for you. But first  
Must hear your story.

*Guil.* Well—I went to Naples,  
Where, as you know, our King by force of arms  
Was eager to revenge the shameful death  
Of Norandino, whom the king of Naples  
Had on the scaffold treacherously murder'd.  
Of which, and Naples too, I say no more .

Than this ; that, entering the city,  
I saw a lady in whom the universe  
Of beauty seem'd to centre ; as it might be  
The sun's whole light into a single beam,  
The heavenly dawn into one drop of dew,  
Or the whole breathing spring into one rose.  
You will believe I lov'd not without cause,  
When you have heard the lady that I speak of  
Is—

*Vic.* Donna Violante !

*Lope.* Knave and fool !

*Vic.* Why so, sir ! only for telling you I saw the  
lady coming this way ; but, I suppose seeing people  
here, she has turned back.

*Lope.* Will you retire awhile, Don Guillen ? this  
lady is my father's guest.

*Guil. (aside).* Beside, she might be angry finding  
me here. *[Exit.*

*Lope.* 'Fore Heaven, my mind misgave me it was  
she he spoke of !

*Vic.* Well, you have got the weather-gage. Tackle  
her now.

*Enter VIOLANTE and ELVIRA.*

*Lope.* Nay, lady, turn not back. What you, the sun

I see by, to abridge my little day  
By enviously returning to the west  
As soon as ris'n, and prematurely drawing  
The veil of night over the blush of dawn !  
Oh, let me not believe I fright you now,  
As yesterday I did, fair Violante,  
Arm'd among savage rocks with savage men,  
From whose rude company your eyes alone  
Have charm'd me, and subdued for the first time  
A fierce, unbridled will.

*Viol.* It were not strange,  
Don Lope, if my bosom trembled still  
With that first apparition. But in truth  
I had not hesitated,  
Had I not seen, or fancied, at your side  
Another stranger.

*Lope.* Oh, a friend ; and one  
Who spoke with me of *you* ; nay, who retir'd  
Only for fear of drawing new disdain  
Upon old love ; and left me here indeed,  
To speak in his behalf.

*Viol.* Alas, Elvira,  
Was't not Don Guillen ?

*Elv.* • Yes.

*Viol.* Don Lope plead

Another's, and Don Guillen's love ! (*She is going.*)

*Lope.*

At least

Let me attend you to my mother's door.

*Viol.* Nay, stay, sir.

*Lope.*

Stay ! and lose my life in losing

This happy opportunity !

*Viol.*

Are life

And opportunity the same ?

*Lope.*

So far,

That neither lost ever returns again.

*Viol.* If you have aught to tell me, tell it here

Before I go.

*Lope.*

Only to ask if you

Confess yourself no debtor to a heart

That long has sigh'd for you ?

*Viol.*

You, sir, are then

Pleading another's cause ?

*Lope.*

I might be shy

To plead in my own person—a reserve

That love oft feels—and pardons.

*Viol.*

'Tis in vain.

I will not own to an account of sighs

Drawn up against me without my consent ;

So tell your friend ; and tell him he mistakes

The way to payment making you, of all,

His agent in the cause.

*Lope.* Nay, nay, but wait.

*Viol.* No more—Adieu ! [*Exit.*

*Lope.* She thought I only us'd

Another's suit as cover to my own,

And cunningly my seeming cunning turns

Against myself. But I will after her ;

If Don Guillen come back, tell him, Vicente,

I'll wait upon him straight. [*Exit.*

*Vic.* Madam Elvira !

*Elv.* Well, Monsieur Cut-throat ?

*Vic.* Well, you are not scared at my face now ?

*Elv.* I don't know that—your face remains as it was.

*Vic.* Come, come, my queen, do me a little favour.

*Elv.* Well, what is that ?

*Vic.* Just only die for love of me ; I always make a point of never asking impossibilities of any woman.

*Elv.* Love is out of the question ! I perhaps might *like* you, did I not know the lengths you go with that monkey Beatrice.

*Vic.* With whom ?

*Elv.* I say with Beatrice. Bystanders see as much, sir, as players.

*Vic.* I with Beatrice ! Lord ! lord ! if you only

knew half what I know, Elvira, you'd not be jealous of her.

*Elv.* Why, what do you know of her ?

*Vic.* A woman who, could she breed at all, would breed foxes and stoats—a tolerable outside, but only, only go near her—Foh ! such a breath ! beside other peculiarities I don't mention out of respect to the sex. But this I tell you, one of those sparkling eyes of hers is glass, and her right leg a wooden one.

*Elv.* Nonsense !

*Vic.* Only you look, and see if she don't limp on one side, and squint on the other.

*Don Guillen (entering at one side).* I can wait no longer.

*Don Lope (entering at the other).* It is no use ; she is shut up with my mother. Now for Don Guillen.

*Elv.* They are back.

*Vic.* We'll settle our little matter by and by.

*Elv.* Glass eyes and wooden legs ! *[Exit.*

*Lope. (To DON GUILLEN).* Forgive my leaving you so long ; I have been

Waiting on one who is my father's guest,  
The lady Violante.

*Guil.* So sweet duty

Needs no excuse.

*Lope.* Now to pursue your story—

*Guil.* Ah—where did I leave off?

*Lope.* About the truce  
Making at Naples, when you saw a lady—

*Guil.* Ay, but I must remember one thing,  
*Lope,*

Most memorable of all. The ambassador  
Empower'd to treat on our good king's behalf  
Was Mendo de Torellas, whose great wisdom  
And justice, both grown grey in state affairs,  
Well fitted him for such authority ;  
Which telling you, and telling you beside,  
That when the treaty made, and he left Naples,  
I left it too, still following in his wake  
The track of a fair star who went with him  
To Saragossa, to this very house—  
Telling you this, I tell you all—tell who  
My lady is—his daughter—Violante,  
Before whose shrine my life and soul together  
Are but poor offerings to consecrate.

*Vic. (aside).* A pretty market we have brought our  
pigs to !  
Who'll bet upon the winner ?

*Lope (aside).* Oh confusion !  
But let us drain the cup at once. Don Guillen,



Your admiration and devotedness  
Needed the addition of no name to point  
Their object out. But tell me,  
Ere I advise with you, how far your prayer  
Is answer'd by your deity ?

*Guil.*

Alas !

Two words will tell—

*Lope.*

And those ?

*Guil.*

Love unreturn'd !

Or worse, return'd with hate.

*Vic. (aside).*

Come, that looks better.

*Guil.* My love for her has now no hope, Don

Lope,

But in your love for me. She is your guest,  
And I as such, beside my joy in you.  
May catch a ray of her—may win you even  
To plead for me in such another strain  
As has not yet wearied her ears in vain ;  
Or might you not ev'n now, as she returns,  
Give her a letter from me ; lest if first  
She see, or hear from others of my coming,  
She may condemn my zeal for persecution,  
And make it matter of renew'd disdain.  
I'll write the letter now, and bring it you ,  
Ere she be back.

[*Exit.*

*Vic.* (to LOPE). Good bye, sir.

*Lope.*

Whither now,

Vicente ?

*Vic.* To the mountains—I am sure  
You'll soon be after me.

*Lope.*

I understand—

But stay awhile.

True, I love Violante, and resent  
Don Guillen's rivalry : but he's my friend—  
Confides to me a passion myself own,  
And cannot blame.

Wait we awhile, Vicente, and perhaps  
A way will open through the labyrinth  
Without our breaking through.

*Vic.*

How glad I am

To see you take't so patiently ! Now, sir,  
Would you be rul'd—

*Lope.*

What then ?

*Vic.*

Why, simply, sir,

Forget the lady—but a few days' flame,  
And then—

*Lope.*

Impossible !

*Vic.*

What's to be done then ?

*Lope.* I know not—But she comes.



Listen to me—Don Guillen—

*Guil. (listening at the side).* Just a moment  
To hear him plead my cause.

*Lope.* Following your beauty, as a flower the  
sun,  
Has come from Italy to Arragon,  
And, as my friend, by me entreats of you  
To let him plead his suit.

*Guil.* Would I could stay  
To hear the noble Lope plead my cause,  
But 'summon'd hence— *[Exit.*

*Viol.* Ill does your second part  
Excuse your ill performance of the first ;  
One failure might be pardon'd, but two such  
Are scarce to be excus'd.

*Lope.* Oh, tell me then  
Which chiefly needs apology !

*Viol.* I will.  
First for your friend Don Guillen ; bid him cease  
All compliment and courtship, knowing well  
How all has been rejected hitherto,  
And will hereafter, to the ruthless winds.

*Lope.* And on the second count—my own ?

*Viol.* How easily  
Out of his answer you may draw your own !

*Lope.* Alas !

*Viol.* For when the judge has to pronounce  
Sentence on two defendants, like yourselves,  
Whose charge is both alike, and bids the one  
Report his condemnation to the other ;  
'Tis plain—

*Lope.* That both must suffer ?

*Viol.* Nay, if so  
The judge had made one sentence serve for both.

*Lope.* Great heavens !

*Guil.* (*listening at the side*). The man dismiss'd,  
I'll hear the rest.

*Viol.* Oh, let it be enough to tell you now  
The heart that once indeed was adamant,  
Resisting all impression—but at last  
Ev'n adamant you know—

*Guil.* Oh, she relents !

*Lope.* Oh, let me kiss those white hands for those  
words !

*Guil.* Excellent friend ! he could not plead more  
warmly  
Were 't for himself.

*Lope.* Oh for some little token  
To vouch, when you have vanisht from my eyes,  
That all was not a dream !

*Viol. (giving him a rose).* This rose, whose hue  
Is of the same that should my cheek imbue ! [*Exit.*]

*Enter* GUILLEN.

*Guil.* Oh how thrice welcome is my lady's  
favour,  
Sent to me by the hand of such a friend !  
How but in such an attitude as this  
Dare I receive it ? (*Kneels.*)

*Lope.* Rise, Don Guillen, rise—  
Flowers are but fading favours that a breath  
Can change and wither.

*Guil.* What mean you by this ?

*Lope.* Only that though the flower in my hands  
Is fresh from Violante's, I must tell you  
It must not pass to yours.

*Guil.* Did not I hear you  
Pleading my cause ?

*Lope.* You might—

*Guil.* And afterwards,  
When I came back again, herself confess  
That, marble as she had been to my vows,  
She now relented tow'rd me !

*Lope.* • If you did,  
'Twould much disprove the listener's adage.

*Guil.*

How ?

*Lope.* You set your ears to such a lucky tune,  
As took in all the words that made for you,  
But not the rest that did complete the measure.

*Guil.* But did not Violante, when you urg'd her  
In my behalf, say she relented ?

*Lope.*

Yes.

*Guil.* 'To whom then ?*Lope.*

'To myself.

*Vic.*

The cat's unbagg'd !

*Guil.* To you !*Lope.*

To me.

*Guil.*

Don Lope, you must see  
That ev'n my friendship for you scarce can stomach  
Such words—or credit them.

*Lope.*

Let him beware  
Who doubts my words, stomach them as he can.

*Guil.* But 'tis a jest —

Bearing my happy fortune in your hands,  
You only, as old love has leave to do,  
'Tantalize ere you give it me. Enough,  
Give me the rose.

*Lope.*

I cannot, being just  
Given to me, and for me.

*Guil.*

His it is

Whose right it is, and that is mine ; and I  
Will have it.

*Lope.* If you can.

*Guil.* Then follow me,  
Where (not in your own house) I may chastise  
The friendship that must needs have play'd me false  
One way or other. *[Exit.*

*Lope.* Lead the way then, sir.

*Enter hurriedly DONNA BLANCA and VIOLANTE from  
opposite sides.*

*Viol.* Don Lope, what is this ?

*Lope.* Nothing, Violante.

*Viol.* I heard your angry voices in my room,  
And could not help—

*Blan.* And I too. O my son,  
Scarce home with us, and all undone already !  
Where are you going ?

*Lope.* No where ; nothing ; leave me.

*Viol.* Tell me the quarrel—Oh ! I dread to hear.

*Lope.* What quarrel, lady ? let me go—your fears  
Deceive you.

*Blan.* Lope, not an hour of peace  
When you are here !



*Lope.* Nay, madam, why accuse me,  
Before you know the cause ?

*Enter URREA.*

*Urr.* How now ?—disputing ?  
Blanca and Violante too ? What is it ?

*Blan.* Oh, nothing ! (I must keep it from his  
father.)  
Nothing—he quarrell'd with Vicente here,  
And would have beat him—and we interposed ;  
Indeed, no more.

*Vic.* The blame is sure to fall  
Upon my shoulders.

*Urr.* Is't not very strange,  
Your disposition, Lope ? never at peace  
With others or yourself.

*Lope.* 'Tis nothing, sir.

*Vic.* He quarrell'd with me, sir, about some  
money  
He thought he ought to have, and couldn't find  
In his breeches' pocket.

*Urr.* Go, go—get you gone, knave.

*Vic.* Always fair words from you at any rate.  
(*Aside.*)

*Urr.* And for such trifles, Lope, you disturb  
My house, affright your mother and her guest  
With your mad passion.

*Lope.* I can only, sir,  
Answer such charge by silence, and retire.  
Now for Don Guillen.

[*Exit.*

*Blan.* Oh let him not go !

*Urr.* Why not ? 'tis a good riddance. *Violante,*  
You must excuse this most unseemly riot  
Close to your chamber. My unruly son,  
When his mad passion's rous'd, neither respects  
Person or place.

*Viol.* Nay, sir, I pardon him.  
And should, for I'm the cause ! (*Aside.*)

*Blan.* Ah, wretched I,  
Who by the very means I would prevent  
His going forth, have op'd the door to him.

(*Noise within of swords, and the voices of LOPE and  
GUILLEN fighting.*)

*Urr.* What noise is that again ?

*Enter ELVIRA.*

*Elv.*

'Tis in the street.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* Oh, my young master fighting—run, sir,  
run !

*Urr.* And 'tis for this I've sacrific'd myself !

*Enter fighting LOPE and GUILLEN ; Gentlemen and  
others trying to part them.*

*Urr. (going between them).* Hold, Lope ! Hold,  
Don Guillen !

*Voices.* Part them ! part them !

*Guil.* Traitor !

*Lope.* Traitor !—I say that he's the traitor  
Whoever—

*Urr.* Madman, can you not forbear  
When your grey-headed father holds your sword !

*Lope.* And in so doing robs me of the honour  
I never got from him.

*Urr.* Oh ! ruffian !  
But if this graceless son will not respect  
His father, my white hairs appeal to you,  
Don Guillen.

*Guil.* And shall not appeal in vain—  
Out of respect, sir, for your age and name,  
And for these gentlemen who interpose,

I shall refer the issue of this quarrel  
To other time and place.

*Lope.*

A good excuse

For fear to hide in.

*Guil.*

Fear !

*Urr.*

Madman ! again !

That the respect his rival shows to me  
Should make my son despise him. By these heav'ns  
This staff shall teach you better.

*Lope.*

Strike me not !

Beware—beware !

*Urr.*

Why, art thou not ashamed—

*Lope.* Yes, of respect for you that's fear of me.

*Guil.* Whoever says or thinks what I have done  
Is out of fear of you, I say—

*Urr.*

He lies !

I'll top your sentence for you.

*Lope.*

Then take thou

The answer ! (*Strikes URREA, who falls : confusion.*)

*A voice.*

What have you done ?

*Another.*

Help, help !

*Voices.* After him, after him !—the parricide !

(*LOPE rushes out and the people after him.*)

*Guil.* I know not how to leave the poor old  
man—

Come, let me help you, sir.

*Urr.*

Parricide !

May outrag'd Heaven that has seen thy crime,  
Witness my curse, and blast thee ! Every sword  
That every pious hand against thee draws,  
Caught up into the glittering elements,  
Turn thunderbolt, (as every weapon shall  
Drawn in God's cause,) and smite thee to the centre !  
That sacrilegious hand which thou hast rais'd  
Against this snow-white head—how shall it show  
Before Heaven's judgment bar ; yea, how can Heav'n  
Ev'n now behold this deed, nor quench its sun,  
Veil its pure infinite blue with awful cloud,  
And with a terrified eclipse of things  
Confound the air you breathe, the light you see,  
The ground you walk on !

*Guil.*

Pray sir, compose yourself—

Your cloak—your staff—

*Urr.*

My staff ! what use is that ?

When it is steel that must avenge my wrong !

Yet give it me—fit instrument

Wherewith to chastise a rebellious child—

Ay, and he did not use his sword on me,

Mark that, nor I on him—give me my staff.

Alas, alas ! and I with no strength left

To wield it, only as I halt along,  
Feeling about with it to find a grave,  
And knocking at deaf earth to let me in.<sup>1</sup>

*Guil.* Nay, calm yourself,  
The population of the place is up  
After the criminal.

*Urr.* And to what purpose ?  
They cannot wipe away my shame by that.  
Let the whole city turn its myriad eyes  
Upon me, and behold a man disgrac'd—  
Disgrac'd by him to whom he gave a being.  
I say, behold me all—the wretched man  
By his own flesh and blood insulted, and  
On his own flesh and blood crying Revenge !  
Revenge ! revenge ! revenge !

<sup>1</sup> Como me podre vengar  
Si aquel, que me ha de ayudar  
A sustentarme, me advierte  
Que armado en la terra dura  
Solo ha de irme aprovechando  
De aldaba, con que ir llamando  
A mi misma sepultura ?

Ne deeth, allas ! ne wol nat han my lyf ;  
Thus walke I, lyk a restelees caityf,  
And on the ground, which is my modres gate,  
I knokke with my staf, bothe early and late,  
And seye, "leve moder, leet me in !"

*Chaucer's Pardoner's Tale.*

Not to the heavens only, nor to Him  
Who sits in judgment there, do I appeal,  
But to the powers of earth. Give me my hat,  
I'll to the king forthwith.

*Vic.* Consider, sir ;  
You would not enter in the palace gates  
So suddenly, and in this plight ?

*Urr.* Why not,  
Whose voice should over-leap the firmament,  
And without any preparation enter  
The palace-doors of God—  
King Pedro ! king of Arragon ! Christian king !  
Whom fools the Cruel call, and Just the wise,  
I call on you, King Pedro<sup>1</sup>—

*King (entering with MENDO and Train).* Who calls  
the king ?

*Urr.* A wretch who, falling at your feet, implores  
Your royal justice.

*King.* I remember you ;

<sup>1</sup> The *Biographie Universelle* says it was Don Pedro of Castile about whose cognomen there was some difference of opinion ; a defence of him being written in 1648 by Count de Roca, ambassador from Spain to Venice, entitled, "El Rey Don Pedro, llamado el Cruel, el Justiciero, y el Necesitado, defendido." It is he, I suppose, figures in the "*Medico de su Honra*." He flourished at the same time, however, with his namesake of Arragon.





*Urr.* Fled ! fled !

*King (to MENDO).* After him then, use all the powers I own  
To bring the wretch to justice. See me not  
Till that be done.

*Men.* I'll do my best, my liege.

*King.* I have it most at heart. In all the rolls  
Of history, I know of no like quarrel :  
And the first judgment on it shall be done  
By the Fourth Pedro, king of Arragon.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Wild Place.*—*Enter MENDO and Officers of Justice armed.*

*1st Officer.* Here, my lord, where the Ebro, swollen with her mountain streams, runs swiftest, he will try to escape.

*Men.* Hunt for him then, leaving neither rock nor thicket unexplored. (*They disperse.*)

Oh, what a fate is mine,  
Having to seek what most I dread to find, '   
Once thought the curse of jealousy alone !

The iron king will see my face no more  
Unless I bring Don Lope to his feet :  
Whom, on the other hand, the gratitude  
And love I bear him fain would save from justice.  
Oh, how—

*Enter some, fighting with DON LOPE.*

*Lope.* I know I cannot save my life,  
But I will sell it dear.

*Men.* Hold off ! the king  
Will have him taken, but not slain. And I,  
If I can save him now, shall find a mean  
To do it afterwards—  
Don Lope !

*Lope.* I should know that voice, the face  
I cannot, blind with fury, dust, and blood.  
Or was't the echo of some inner voice,  
Some far off thunder of the memory,  
That moves me more than all these fellows' swords !  
Is it Don Mendo ?

*Men.* Who demands of you  
Your sword, and that you yield in the king's name.

*Lope.* I yield ?

*Men.* Ay, sir, what can you do beside ?

*Lope.* Slaying be slain. And yet my heart relents

Before your voice ; and now I see your face  
My eyes dissolve in tears. Why, how is this ?  
What charm is on my sword ?

*Men.* 'Tis but the effect  
And countenance of justice that inspires  
Involuntary awe in the offender.

*Lope.* Not that. Delinquent as I am, I could,  
With no more awe of justice than a mad dog,  
Bite right and left among her officers ;  
But 'tis yourself alone : to you alone  
Do I submit myself ; yield up my sword  
Already running with your people's blood,  
And at your feet—

*Men.* Rise, Lope. Heaven knows  
How gladly would your judge change place with you  
The criminal ; far happier to endure  
Your peril than my own anxiety.  
But do not you despair, however stern  
Tow'ards you I carry me before the world.  
The king is so enrag'd—

*Lope.* What, he has heard !

*Men.* Your father cried for vengeance at his feet.

*Lope.* Where is my sword ?

*Men.* In vain. 'Tis in my  
hand.

*Lope.* Where somehow it affrights me—as before  
When giving you my dagger, it turn'd on me  
With my own blood.

*Mendo.* Ho there !  
Cover Don Lope's face, and carry him  
To prison after me. (*Aside.*) Hark, in your ear,  
Conduct him swiftly, and with all secrecy,  
To my own house—in by the private door,  
Without his knowing whither,  
And bid my people watch and wait on him.  
I'll to the king—Alas, what agony,  
I know not what, grows on me more and more !  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Room in the Palace.—Enter KING.*

*King.* Don Mendo comes not back, and must not  
come,  
Till he have done his errand. I myself  
Can have no rest till justice have her due.  
A son to strike his father in my realm  
Unaw'd, and then unpunisht !  
But by great Heav'n the law shall be aveng'd  
So long as I shall reign in Arragon.  
Don Mendo !

*Enter MENDO.*

*Mendo.* Let me kiss your Highness' hand—

*King.* Welcome, thou other Atlas of my realm,  
Who shar'st the weight with me. For I doubt not,  
Coming thus readily into my presence,  
You bring Don Lope with you.

*Men.* Yes, my liege—  
Fast prisoner in my house, that none may see  
Or talk with him.

*King.* Among your services  
You have not done a better.  
The crime is strange, 'tis fit the sentence on it  
Be memorably just.

*Men.* Most true, my liege,  
Who I am sure will not be warp'd away  
By the side current of a first report,  
But on the whole broad stream of evidence  
Move to conclusion. I do *know* this charge  
Is not so grave as was at first reported.

*King.* But is not thus much clear—that a son smote  
His father ?

*Men.* Yes, my liege.

*King.* And can a charge  
Be weightier ?

*Men.* I confess the naked fact,  
But 'tis the special cause and circumstance  
That give the special colour to the crime.

*King.* I shall be glad to have my kingdom freed  
From the dishonour of so foul a deed  
By any extenuation.

*Men.* Then I think  
Your Majesty shall find it here. 'Tis thus :  
Don Lope, on what ground I do not know,  
Fights with Don Guillen—in the midst o' the fray,  
Comes old Urrea, at the very point  
When Guillen was about to give the lie  
To his opponent—which the old man, enrag'd  
At such unseemly riot in his house,  
Gives for him ; calls his son a fouler name  
Than gentleman can bear, and in the scuffle  
Receives a blow that in his son's blind rage  
Was aim'd abroad—in the first heat of passion  
Throws himself at your feet, and calls for vengeance,  
Which, as I hear, he now repents him of.  
He's old and testy—age's common fault—  
And, were not this enough to lame swift justice,  
There's an old law in Arragon, my liege,  
That in our courts father and son shall not  
Be heard in evidence against each other ;

In which provision I would fain persuade you  
Bury this quarrel.

*King.* And this seems just to you ?

*Men.* It does, my liege.

*King.* Then not to me, Don  
Mendo,

Who will examine, sentence, and record,

Whether in such a scandal to the realm

The son be guilty of impiety,

Or the sire idle to accuse him of 't.

Therefore I charge you have Urrea too

From home to-night, and guarded close alone ;

It much imports the business.

*Men.* I will, my liege.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III. *A Corridor in URREA'S House, with three doors in front.—Enter from a side door VIOLANTE and ELVIRA.*

*Viol.* Ask me no more, Elvira ; I cannot answer  
when my thoughts are all locked up where Lope lies.

*Elv.* And know you where that is ? Nearer 'than  
you think ; there, in my lord your father's room.

*Viol.* There ! Oh, could I but save him !

*Elv.* You can at least comfort him.

*Viol.* Something must be done. Either I will save his life, Elvira, or die with him. Have you the key?

*Elv.* I have one; my lord has the master-key.

*Viol.* Yours will do, give it me. I am desperate, Elvira, and in his danger drown my maiden shame; see him I will at least. Do you rest here and give me a warning if a footstep come. (*She enters centre door.*)

SCENE IV. *An inner Chamber in URREA'S House.—*

*LOPE discovered.*

*Lope.* Whither then have they brought me? Ah,  
Violante,

Your beauty costs me dear! And even now  
I count the little I have yet to live  
Minute by minute, like one last sweet draught,  
But for your sake. Nay, 'tis not life I care for,  
But only Violante.

*Violante (entering unseen).* Oh, his face  
Is bathed in his own blood; he has been wounded.  
Don Lope!

*Lope.* Who is it calls on a name  
I thought all tongues had buried in its shame?

*Viol.* One who yet—pities you.



*Lope (turning and seeing her).* Am I then dead,  
And thou some living spirit come to meet me  
Upon the threshold of another world ;  
Or some dead image that my living brain  
Draws from remembrance on the viewless air,  
And gives the voice I love to ? Oh, being here,  
Whatever thou may'st be, torment me not  
By vanishing at once.

*Viol.* No spirit, Lope,  
And no delusive image of the brain ;  
But one who, wretched in your wretchedness,  
And partner of the crime you suffer for,  
All risk of shame and danger cast away,  
Has come—but hark !—I may have but a moment—  
The door I came by will be left unlockt  
To-night, and you must fly.

*Lope.* Oh, I have heard  
Of a fair flower of such strange quality,  
It makes a wound where there was none before,  
And heals what wound there was. Oh, Violante,  
You who first made an unscath'd heart to bleed,  
Now save a desperate life !

*Viol.* And I have heard  
Of two yet stranger flowers that, severally,  
Each in its heart a deadly poison holds,

Which, if they join, turns to a sovereign balm.  
And so with us, who in our bosoms bear  
A passion which destroys us when apart,  
But when together—

*Elvira (calling within).* Madam ! madam ! your  
father !

*Viol.* Farewell !

*Lope.* But you return ?

*Viol.* To set you free.

*Lope.* That as it may ; only return to me.

[*Exit VIOLANTE, leaving LOPE.*]

SCENE V. *Same as SCENE III. ELVIRA waiting.—*

*Enter VIOLANTE from centre door.*

*Viol.* Quick ! lock the door, Elvira, and away  
with me on wings. My father must not find me here.

*Elv.* Nay, you need not be frightened, he has  
gone to my lady Blanca's room by the way.

*Viol.* No matter, he must not find me ; I would  
learn too what is stirring in the business.

Oh, would I ever drag my purpose through,  
I must be desperate and cautious too. [*Exit.*]

*Elv. (locking the door).* Well, that's all safe, and  
now myself to hear what news is stirring.

*Vicente (talking as he enters).* In the devil's name was there ever such a clutter made about a blow ? People all up in arms, and running here and there, and up and down, and every where, as if the great Tom of Velilla was a ringing.

*Elv.* Vicente ! what's the matter ?

*Vic.* Oh, a very great matter, Elvira. I am very much put out indeed.

*Elv.* What about, and with whom ?

*Vic.* With all the world, and my two masters, the young and old one, especially.

*Elv.* But about what ?

*Vic.* With the young one for being so ready with his fists, and the old one bawling out upon it to heaven and earth, and then Madam Blanca, she must join in the chorus too ; and then your grand Don Mendo there, with whom seizing's so much in season, he has seized my master, and my master's father, and Don Guillen, and clapt them all up in prison. Then I've a quarrel with the king !

*Elv.* With the king ! You must be drunk, Vicente.

*Vic.* I only wish I was.

*Elv.* But what has the king done ?

*Vic.* Why let me be beaten at least fifty thousand times, without caring a jot : and now forsooth be-

cause an old fellow gets a little push, his eyes flash axe and gibbet. Then, Elvira, I'm very angry with you.

*Elv.* And why with me ?

*Vic.* Because, desperately in love with me as you are, you never serenade me, nor write me a billet-doux, nor ask me for a kiss of my fair hand.

*Elv.* Have I not told you, sir, I leave that all to Beatrice ?

*Vic.* And have I not told you, Beatrice may go hang for me ?

*Elv.* Oh, Vicente, could I believe you !

*Vic.* Come, give me a kiss on credit of it ; in case I lie, I'll pay you back.

*Elv.* Well, for this once.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* The saints be praised, I've found you at last !

*Vic.* Beatrice !

*Elv.* Well, what's the matter ?

*Vic.* You'll soon see.

*Beat.* Oh, pray proceed, proceed, good folks. Never mind me : you've business—don't interrupt it—I've seen quite enough, besides being quite indifferent who wears my cast-off shoes.

*Elv.* I beg to say, madam, I wear no shoes except my own, and if I *were* reduced to other people's, certainly should not choose those that are made for a wooden leg.

*Beat.* A wooden leg? Pray, madam, what has a wooden leg to do with me?

*Elv.* Oh, madam, I must refer you to your own feelings.

*Beat.* I tell you, madam, these hands should tear your hair up by the roots, if it had roots to tear.

*Vic.* Now for her turn.

*Elv.* Why, does she mean to insinuate my hair is as false as that left eye of hers?

*Beat.* Do you mean to insinuate my left eye is false?

*Elv.* Ay; and say it to your teeth.

*Beat.* More, madam, than I ever could say to yours, unless, indeed, you've *paid*, madam, for the set you wear.

*Elv.* Have you the face to say my teeth are false?

*Beat.* Have *you* the face to say my eye's of glass?

*Elv.* I'll teach you to say I wear a wig.

*Beat.* Would that my leg *were* wood just for the occasion.

*Vic.* Ladies, ladies, first consider where we are.

*Beat.* Oh ho! I think I begin to understand.

*Elv.* Oh, and so methinks do I.

*Beat.* It is this wretch—

*Elv.* This knave—

*Beat.* This rascal—

*Elv.* This vagabond—

*Beat.* Has told all these lies.

*Elv.* Has done all this mischief.

} Spoken together.

(*They set upon and pinch him, &c.*)

*Vic.* Ladies, ladies—Mercy ! oh ! ladies ! just listen !

*Elv.* Listen indeed ! If it were not that I hear people coming—

*Vic.* Heaven be praised for it !

*Beat.* We will defer the execution then—And in the mean while shall we two sign a treaty of peace ?

*Elv.* My hand to it—Agreed !

*Beat.* Adieu !

*Elv.* Adieu !

*Exeunt BEATRICE and ELVIRA.*

*Vic.* The devil that seiz'd the swine sure has  
seiz'd you,  
And all your pinches make me tenfold writhe  
Because you never gave the king his tithe. [*Exit.*

SCENE VI. DONNA BLANCA'S *Apartment: it is dark.*—

*Enter the KING disguised, and BLANCA following him.*

*Blan.* Who is this man,  
That in the gathering dusk enters our house,  
Enmaskt and muffled thus? what is't you want?  
To croak new evil in my ears? for none  
But ravens now come near us—Such a silence  
Is not the less ill-omen'd. Beatrice!  
A light! my blood runs cold—Answer me, man,  
What want you with me?

*King.* Let us be alone,  
And I will tell you.

*Blan.* Leave us, Beatrice—  
I'll dare the worst—And now reveal yourself.

*King.* Not till the door be lockt.

*Blan.* Help, help!

*King.* Be still.

*Blan.* What would you? and who are you then?

*King (discovering himself).* The king.

*Blan.* The king!

*King.* Do you not know me?

*Blan.* Yea, my liege  
Now the black cloud has fallen from the sun.

But cannot guess why, at an hour like this,  
And thus disguis'd—Oh, let me know at once  
Whether in mercy or new wrath you come  
To this most wretched house !

*King.* In neither, Blanca ;  
But in the execution of the trust  
That Heav'n has given to kings.

*Blan.* And how, my liege,  
Fall I beneath your royal vigilance ?

*King.* You soon shall hear : but, Blanca, first take  
• breath,

And still your heart to its accustom'd tune,  
For I must have you all yourself to answer  
What I must ask of you. Listen to me.  
Your son, in the full eye of God and man,  
Has struck his father—who as publicly  
Has cried to me for vengeance—such a feud  
Coming at length to such unnatural close,  
Men 'gin to turn suspicious eyes on you,—  
You, Blanca, so mixt up in such a cause  
As in the annals of all human crime  
Is not recorded. Men begin to ask  
Can these indeed be truly son and sire ?  
This is the question, and to sift it home,  
I am myself come hither to sift you



By my own mouth. Open your heart to me,  
Relying on the honour of a king  
That nothing you reveal to me to-night  
Shall ever turn against your good repute.  
We are alone, none to way-lay the words  
That travel from your lips ; speak out at once ;  
Or, by the heavens, Blanca,—

*Blan.*

Oh, my liege,

Not in one breath  
Turn royal mercy into needless threat ;  
Though it be true my bosom has so long  
This secret kept close prisoner, and hop'd  
To have it buried with me in my grave,  
Yet if I peril my own name and theirs  
By such a silence, I'll not leave to rumour  
Another hour's suspicion ; but reveal  
'To you, my liege, yea, and to heav'n and earth,  
My most disastrous story.

*King.*

I attend.

*Blan.* My father, though of lineage high and clear  
As the sun's self, was poor ; and knowing well  
How in this world honour fares ill alone,  
Betroth'd the beauty of my earliest years  
(The only dowry that I brought with me) ,  
To Lope de Urrea, whose estate

Was to supply the much he miss'd of youth.  
We married—like December wed to May,  
Or flower of earliest summer set in snow ;  
Yet heaven witness that I honour'd, ay,  
And lov'd him ; though with little cause of love,  
And ever cold returns ; but I went on  
Doing my duty toward him, hoping still  
To have a son to fill the gaping void  
That lay between us—yea, I pray'd for one  
So earnestly, that God, who has ordain'd  
That we should ask at once for all and nothing  
Of Him who best knows what is best for us,  
Denied me what I wrongly coveted.  
Well, let me turn the leaf on which are written  
The troubles of those ill-assorted years,  
And to my tale. I had a younger sister,  
Whom to console me in my wretched home,  
I took to live with me—of whose fair youth  
A gentleman enamour'd—Oh, my liege,  
Ask not his name—yet why should I conceal it,  
Whose honour may not leave a single chink  
For doubt to nestle in ?—Sir, 'twas Don Mendo,  
Your minister ; who, when his idle suit  
Prosper'd not in my sister's ear, found means,  
Feeing one of the household to his purpose,

To get admittance to her room by night ;  
Where, swearing marriage soon should sanction love,  
He went away the victor of an honour  
That like a villain he had come to steal ;  
Then, but a few weeks after, (so men quit  
All obligation save of their desire,)  
Married another, and growing great at court,  
Went on your father's bidding into France  
Ambassador, and from that hour to this  
Knows not the tragic issue of his crime.  
I, who perceiv'd my sister's alter'd looks,  
And how in mind and body she far'd ill,  
With menace and persuasion wrung from her  
The secret I have told you, and of which  
She bore within her bosom such a witness  
As doubly prey'd upon her life. Enough ;  
She was my sister, why reproach her then,  
And to no purpose now the deed was done ?  
Only I wonder'd at mysterious Heav'n,  
Which her misfortune made to double mine,  
Who had been pining for the very boon  
That was her shame and sorrow ; till at last,  
Out of the tangle of this double grief  
I drew a thread to extricate us both,  
By giving forth myself about to bear

The child whose birth my sister should conceal.  
'Twas done—the day came on—I feign'd the pain  
She felt, and on my bosom as my own  
Cherish'd the crying infant she had borne,  
And died in bearing—for even so it was ;  
I and another matron (who alone  
Was partner in the plot)  
Assigning other illness for her death.  
This is my story, sir—this is the crime,  
Of which the guilt being wholly mine, be mine  
The punishment ; I pleading on my knees  
My love both to my husband and my sister  
As some excuse. Pedro of Arragon,  
Whom people call the Just, be just to me :  
I do not ask for mercy, but for justice,  
And that, whatever be my punishment,  
It may be told of me, and put on record,  
That, howsoever and with what design  
I might deceive my husband and the world,  
At least I have not sham'd my birth and honour.

*King (apart).* Thus much at least is well ; the  
blackest part  
Of this unnatural feud is washt away  
By this confession, though it swell the list  
Of knotted doubts that Justice must resolve ;

As thus :—Don Lope has revil'd and struck  
One whom himself and all the world believe  
His father—a belief that I am pledg'd  
Not to disprove. Don Mendo has traduc'd  
A noble lady to her death ; and Blanca  
Contriv'd an ill imposture on her lord :  
Two secret and one public misdemeanour,  
To which I must adjudge due punishment.  
Blanca, enough at present, you have done  
Your duty ; Fare you well.

*Blan.* Heav'n keep your Highness !

*Don Mendo (knocking within).* Open the door.

*King.* Who calls?

*Blan.* I know not, sir.

*King.* Open it, then, but on your life reveal not  
That I am here. (*KING hides, BLANCA opens the door.*)

*Blan.* Who is it calls ?

*Enter MENDO.*

*Men.* I, Blanca.

*Blar.* Your errand ?

*Men.* Only, Blanca, to beseech you  
Fear not, whatever you may hear or see  
Against your son. His cause is in my hands,

His person in my keeping ; being so,  
Who shall arraign my dealings with him ?

*King* (*coming forth*). I.

*Men.* My liege, if you—

*King.* Enough ; give me the key  
Of Lope's prison.

*Men.* This it is, my liege,  
Only—

*King.* I know enough. Blanca, retire.  
Mendo, abide you here. To-night shall show  
If I be worthy of my name or no. [*Exit.*

*Men.* What is the matter, Blanca ?

*Blan.* Your misdeeds,  
And mine, Don Mendo, which just Heaven now  
Revenge with one blow on both of us.  
After the King ! nor leave him till he swear  
To spare my Lope, who, I swear to you,  
Is not my son, but yours, and my poor Laura's !

*Men.* Merciful Heav'ns ! But I will save his life  
Come what come may to me.

*Blan.* Away, away, then !  
[*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE VII. *Same as SCENE III.—Enter VIOLANTE and ELVIRA at a side door.*

*Elv.* Consider, madam.

*Viol.* No !

*Elv.* But think—

*Viol.* I tell you it must be done.

*Elv.* They will accuse your father.

*Viol.* Let them ; I tell you it must be done, and now ; I ask'd you not for advice, but to obey me. Unlock the door.

*Elv.* Oh how I tremble ! Hark !

*Viol.* A moment ! They must not find him passing out—the attempt and not the deed confounding us.<sup>1</sup> Listen !

*Elv.* (*listening at a side door*). I can hear nothing distinct, only a confused murmur of voices.

*Viol.* Let me—hush !—Hark ! they are approaching !

*Enter MENDO.*

*Men.* Anguish, oh ! anguish !

*Viol.* My father !

*Men.* Ay, indeed,

<sup>1</sup> Y se queda su intencion  
Sin su efecto descubierta.

And a most wretched one.

*Viol.*

What is it, sir ?

Tell me at once.

*Men.*

I know not. Oh, 'tis false !

I know too well, and you must know it too.

My daughter, the poor prisoner who lies there

Is my own son, not Blanca's, not Urrea's,

But my own son, your brother, Violante !

*Viol.* My brother !

*Men.*

Ay, your brother, my own son,

Whom we must save !

*Viol.*

Alas, sir, I was here

On the same errand, ere I knew—but hark !

All's quiet now.

*(A groan within.)*

*Men.*

Listen ! What groan was that ?

*Viol.* My hand shakes so, I cannot—

*Lope (within).*

Mercy, O God !

*Men.* The key, the key !—but hark ! they call  
again

At either door ; we must unlock.

*(They unlock the side doors.—Enter through one BLANCA  
and BEATRICE, through the other URREA and VICENTE.)*

*Urr.*

Don Mendo,

The king desires me from your mouth to learn



His sentence on my son.

*Blan.* Oh, Violante !

*Men.* From me ! from me ! to whom the king  
as yet

Has not deliver'd it.—

But what is this ? Oh, God !

*(The centre door opens and DON LOPE is discovered, garrotted, with a paper in his hand, and lights at each side.)*

*Urr.* A sight to turn .

Rancour into remorse.

*Men.* In his cold hand  
He holds a scroll, the sentence, it may be,  
The king referr'd you to. Read it, Urrea ;  
I cannot. Oh, my son, the chastisement  
That I alone have merited has come  
Upon us both, and doubled the remorse  
That I must feel—and stifle !

*Urr. (reading).* “He that reviles and strikes whom  
he believes  
His father, let him die for't ; and let those  
Who have disgrac'd a noble name, or join'd  
An ill imposture, see his doom ; and show  
Three judgments summ'd up in a single blow.”

---

# THE MAYOR OF ZALAMEA

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING PHILIP II.

DON LOPE DE FIGUERROA.

DON ALVARO DE ATAIDE.

PEDRO CRESPO, *a Farmer of Zalamea.*

JUAN, *his Son.*

ISABEL, *his Daughter.*

INES, *his Niece.*

DON MENDO, *a poor Hidalgo.*

NUÑO, *his Servant.*

REBOLLEDO, *a Soldier.*

CHISPA, *his Mistress.*

A SERGEANT, A NOTARY, SOLDIERS, LABOURERS,  
CONSTABLES, ROYAL SUITE, &c.

# THE MAYOR OF ZALAMEA

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Country near Zalamea.—Enter REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, and Soldiers.*

**REB.** Confound, say I, these forced marches from place to place, without halt or bait ; what say you, friends ?

*All.* Amen !

**Reb.** To be trailed over the country like a pack of gipsies, after a little scrap of flag upon a pole, eh ?

*1st Soldier.* Rebollo's off !

**Reb.** And that infernal drum which has at last been good enough to stop a moment stunning us.

*2nd Sold.* Come, come, Rebollo, don't storm : we shall soon be at Zalamea.

**Reb.** And where will be the good of that if I'm dead before I get there ? And if not, 'twill only be from bad to worse : for if we all reach the place alive, as sure as death up comes Mr. Mayor to per-

suade the Commissary we had better march on to the next town. At first Mr. Commissary replies very virtuously, "Impossible ! the men are fagged to death." But after a little pocket persuasion, then it's all "Gentlemen, I'm very sorry : but orders have come for us to march forward, and immediately"—and away we have to trot, foot weary, dust be-draggled, and starved as we are. Well, I swear if I do get alive to Zalamea to-day, I'll not leave it on this side o' sun-rise for love, lash, or money. It won't be the first time in my life I've given 'em the slip.

*1st Sold.* Nor the first time a poor fellow has had the slip given him for doing so. And more likely than ever now that Don Lope de Figuerroa has taken the command, a fine brave fellow they say, but a devil of a Tartar, who'll have every inch of duty done, or take the change out of his own son, without waiting for trial either.<sup>1</sup>

*Reb.* Listen to this now, gentlemen ! By Heaven, I'll be beforehand with him.

*2nd Sold.* Come, come, a soldier shouldn't talk so.

<sup>1</sup> Don Lope de Figuerroa, who figures also in the *Amar despues de la Muerte*, was (says Mr. Ticknor) "the commander under whom Cervantes served in Italy, and probably in Portugal, when he was in the *Tercio de Flandes*,—the Flanders Regiment,—one of the best bodies of troops in the armies of

*Reb.* I tell you it isn't for myself I care so much, as for this poor little thing that follows me.

*Chis.* Signor Rebolledo, don't you fret about me ; you know I was born with a beard on my heart if not on my chin, if ever girl was ; and your fearing or me is as bad as if I was afraid myself. Why, when I came along with you I made up my mind to hardship and danger for honour's sake ; else if I'd wanted to live in clover, I never should have left the Alderman who kept such a table as all Aldermen don't, I promise you. Well, what's the odds ? I chose to leave him and follow the drum, and here I am, and if I don't flinch, why should you ?

*Reb.* 'Fore Heaven, you're the crown of woman-kind !

*Soldiers.* So she is, so she is, Viva la Chispa !

*Reb.* And so she is, and one cheer more for her, hurrah ! especially if she'll give us a song to lighten the way.

*Chis.* The castanet shall answer for me.

*Reb.* I'll join in—and do you, comrades, bear a hand in the chorus.

*Soldiers.* Fire away !

Philip II., and the very one now advancing, with perhaps Cervantes in it, to Zalamea.

*Chispa sings.*

I.

Titiri tiri, marching is weary,

Weary, weary, and long is the way :

Titiri tiri, hither, my deary,

What meat have you got for the soldier to-day ?

"Meat have I none, my merry men,"

Titiri tiri, then kill the old hen.

"Alas and a day ! the old hen is dead !"

Then give us a cake from the oven instead.

Titiri titiri titiri tiri,

Give us a cake from the oven instead.

II.

Admiral, admiral, where have you been-a ?

"I've been fighting where the waves roar."

Ensign, ensign, what have you seen-a ?

"Glory and honour and gunshot galore ;

Fighting the Moors in column and line,

Poor fellows, they never hurt me or mine—

Titiri titiri titiri tina"—

*1st Sold.* Look, look, comrades—what between singing and grumbling we never noticed yonder church among the trees.

*Reb.* Is that Zalamea ?

*Chis.* Yes, that it is, I know the steeple. Hurrah ! we'll finish the song when we get into quarters, or have another as good ; for you know I have 'em of all sorts and sizes.

*Reb.* Halt a moment, here's the sergeant.

*2nd Sold.* And the captain too.

*Enter Captain and Sergeant.*

*Capt.* Good news, gentlemen, no more marching for to-day at least ; we halt at Zalamea till Don Lope joins with the rest of the regiment from Llerena. So who knows but you may have a several days' rest here ?

*Reb. and Solds.* Huzzah for our captain !

*Capt.* Your quarters are ready, and the Commissary will give every one his billet on marching in.

*Chis. (singing).* Now then for

Titiri tiri, hither, my deary,  
Heat the oven and kill the old hen.

*[Exit with Soldiers.]*

*Capt.* Well, Mr. Sergeant, have you my billet ?

*Serg.* Yes, sir.

*Capt.* And where am I to put up ?

*Serg.* With the richest man in Zalamea, a farmer, as proud as Lucifer's heir-apparent.

*Capt.* Ah, the old story of an upstart.

*Serg.* However, sir, you have the best quarters in the place, including his daughter, who is, they say, the prettiest woman in Zalamea.

*Capt.* Pooh ! a pretty peasant ! splay hands and feet.



*Serg.* Shame ! shame !

*Capt.* Isn't it true, puppy ?

*Serg.* What would a man on march have better than a pretty country lass to toy with ?

*Capt.* Well, I never saw one I cared for, even on march. I can't call a woman a woman unless she's clean about the hands and fetlocks, and otherwise well appointed—a lady in short.

*Serg.* Well, any one for me who'll let me kiss her. Come, sir, let us be going, for if you won't be at her, I will.

*Capt.* Look, look, yonder !

*Serg.* Why it must be Don Quixote himself with his very Rosinante too, that Michel Cervantes writes of.

*Capt.* And his Sancho at his side. Well, carry you my kit on before to quarters, and then come and tell me when all's ready. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Zalamea, before CRESPO's House.*—*Enter* DON MENDO *and* NUÑO.

*Men.* How's the gray horse ?

*Nun.* You may as well call him the *Dun* ; so screw'd he can't move a leg.

*Men.* Did you have him walk'd gently 'about ?

*Nun.* Walk'd about ! when it's corn he wants,  
poor devil !

*Men.* And the dogs ?

*Nun.* Ah, now, they might do if you'd give them  
the horse to eat.

*Men.* Enough, enough—it has struck three. My  
gloves and tooth-pick.

*Nun.* That sinecure tooth-pick !

*Men.* I tell you I would brain anybody who in-  
sinuated to me I had not dined—and on game too.  
But •tell me, Nuño, havn't the soldiers come into  
Zalamea this afternoon ?

*Nun.* Yes, sir.

*Men.* What a nuisance for the commonalty who  
have to quarter them !

*Nun.* But worse for those who havn't.

*Men.* What do you mean, sir ?

*Nun.* I mean the squires. Ah, sir ; if the soldiers  
aren't billeted on them, do you know why ?

*Men.* Well, why ?

*Nun.* For fear of being starved—which would be  
a bad job for the king's service.

*Men.* God rest my father's soul, says I, who left  
me a pedigree and patent all blazon'd in gold and  
azure, that exempts me from such impositions.

*Nun.* I wish he'd left you the gold in a more available shape, however.

*Men.* Though indeed when I come to think of it, I don't know if I owe him any thanks ; considering that unless he had consented to beget me an Hidalgo at once, I wouldn't have been born at all, for him or any one.

*Nun.* Humph ! Could you have helped it ?

*Men.* Easily.

*Nun.* How, sir ?

*Men.* You must know that every one that is born is the essence of the food his parents eat—

*Nun.* Oh ! Your parents did eat then, sir ? You have not inherited *that* of them, at all events.

*Men.* Which forthwith converts itself into proper flesh and blood—ergo, if my father had been an eater of onions, for instance, he would have begotten me with a strong breath ; on which I should have said to him, “ Hold, I must come of no such nastiness as that, I promise you.”

*Nun.* Ah, now I see the old saying is true.

*Men.* What is that ?

*Nun.* That hunger sharpens wit.

*Men.* Knave, do you insinuate—

*Nun.* I only know it is now three o'clock, and we

have neither of us yet had any thing but our own spittle to chew.

*Men.* Perhaps so, but there are distinctions of rank. An Hidalgo, sir, has no belly.

*Nun.* Oh Lord ! that I were an Hidalgo !

*Men.* Possibly ; servants must learn moderation in all things. But let me hear no more of the matter ; we are under Isabel's window.

*Nun.* There again—If you are so devoted an admirer, why on earth, sir, don't you ask her in marriage of her father ? by doing which you would kill two birds with one stone ; get yourself something to eat, and his grandchildren squires.

*Men.* Hold your tongue, sir, it is impious. Am I, an Hidalgo with such a pedigree, to demean myself with a plebeian connexion just for money's sake ?

*Nun.* Well, I've always heard say a mean father-in-law is best ; better stumble on a pebble than run your head against a post. But, however, if you don't mean marriage, sir, what do you mean ?

*Men.* And pray, sir, can't I dispose of her in a convent in case I get tired of her ? But go directly, and tell me if you can get a sight of her.

*Nun.* I'm afraid lest her father should get a sight of me.

*Men.* And what if he do, being my man ? Go and do as I bid you.

*Nun.* (*after going to look*). Come, sir, you owe one meal at least now—she's at the window with her cousin.

*Men.* Go again, and tell her something about her window being another East, and she a second Sun dawning from it in the afternoon.

(ISABEL and INES come to the window.)

*Ines.* For heaven's sake, cousin, let's stand here and see the soldiers march in.

*Isab.* Not I, while that man is in the way, Ines ; you know how I hate the sight of him.

*Ines.* With all his devotion to you !

*Isab.* I wish he would spare himself and me the trouble.

*Ines.* I think you are wrong to take it as an affront.

*Isab.* How would you have me take it ?

*Ines.* Why, as a compliment.

*Isab.* What, when I hate the man ?

*Men.* Ah ! 'pon the honour of an Hidalgo, (which is a sacred oath,) I could have sworn that till this moment the sun had not risen. But why should I wonder ? when indeed a second Aurora—

*Isab.* Signor Don Mendo, how often have I told you not to waste your time playing these fool's antics before my window day after day ?

*Men.* If a pretty woman only knew, la ! how anger improved its beauty ! her complexion needs no other paint than indignation. Go on, go on, lovely one, grow angrier, and lovelier still.

*Isab.* You shan't have even that consolation ; come, Ines. [Exit.

*Ines.* Beware of the portcullis, sir knight.

• (Shuts down the blind in his face.)

*Men.* Ines, beauty must be ever victorious, whether advancing or in retreat.

*Enter CRESPO.*

*Cres.* That I can never go in or out of my house without that squireen haunting it !

*Nun.* Pedro Crespo, sir !

*Men.* Oh—ah—let us turn another way ; 'tis an ill-conditioned fellow.

*As he turns, enter JUAN.*

*Juan.* That I never can come home but this ghost of an Hidalgo is there to spoil my appetite.

will see his room is got ready directly ; and do you tell his Honour that, come when he will, he shall find me and mine at his service.

*Serg.* Good—he will be here directly. [*Exit.*

*Juan.* I wonder, father, that rich as you are, you still submit yourself to these nuisances.

*Cres.* Why, boy, how could I help them ?

*Juan.* You know ; by buying a patent of Gentility.

*Cres.* A patent of Gentility ! upon thy life now dost think there's a soul who doesn't know that I'm no gentleman at all, but just a plain farmer ? What's the use of my buying a patent of Gentility, if I can't buy the gentle blood along with it ! will any one think me a bit more of a gentleman for buying fifty patents ? Not a whit ;—I should only prove I was worth so many thousand royals, not that I had gentle blood in my veins, which can't be bought at any price. If a fellow's been bald ever so long, and buys him a fine wig, and claps it on ; will his neighbours think it is his own hair a bit the more ? No, they will say, " So and so has a fine wig ; and, what's more, he must have paid handsomely for it too." But they know his bald pate is safe under it all the while. That's all he gets by it.

*Juan.* Nay, sir, he gets to look younger and handsomer, and keeps off sun and cold.

*Cres.* Tut ! I'll have none of your wig honour at any price. My grandfather was a farmer, so was my father, so is yours, and so shall you be after him. Go, call your sister.

*Enter ISABEL and INES.*

Oh, here she is. Daughter, our gracious king (whose life God save these thousand years !) is on his way to be crowned at Lisbon ; thither the troops are marching from all quarters, and among others that fine veteran Flanders regiment, commanded by the famous Don Lope de Figuerroa, will march into Zalamea, and be quartered here to-day ; some of the soldiers in my house. Is it not as well you should be out of the way ?

*Isab.* Sir, 'twas upon this very errand I came to you, knowing what nonsense I shall have to hear if I stay below. My cousin and I can go up to the garret, and there keep so close, the very sun shall not know of our whereabouts.

*Cres.* That's my good girl. Juanito, you wait here to receive them in case they come while I am out looking after their entertainment.



*Isab.* Come, Ines.

*Ines.* Very well—

Though I've heard in a song what folly 'twould be  
To try keep in a loft what won't keep on the tree.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Captain and Sergeant.*

*Serg.* This is the house, sir.

*Capt.* Is my kit come ?

*Serg.* Yes, sir, and (*aside*) I'll be the first to take  
an inventory of the pretty daughter. [*Exit.*]

*Juan.* Welcome, sir, to our house ; we count it a  
great honour to have such a cavalier as yourself for a  
guest, I assure you. (*Aside.*) What a fine fellow !  
what an air ! I long to try the uniform, somehow.

*Capt.* Thank you, my lad

*Juan.* You must forgive our poor house, which we  
devoutly wish was a palace for your sake. My father  
is gone after your supper, sir ; may I go and see that  
your chamber is got ready for you ?

*Capt.* Thank you, thank you.

*Juan.* Your servant, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Enter Sergeant.*

*Capt.* Well, sergeant, where's the Dulcinea you  
told me of ?

*Serg.* Deuce take me, sir, if I havn't been looking everywhere in parlour, bed-room, kitchen, and scullery, up-stairs and down-stairs, and can't find her out.

*Capt.* Oh, no doubt the old fellow has hid her away for fear of us.

*Serg.* Yes, I ask'd a serving wench, and she confess'd her master had lock'd the girl up in the attic, with strict orders not even to look out so long as we were in the place.

*Capt.* Ah ! these clodpoles are all so jealous of the service. And what is the upshot ? Why, I, who didn't care a pin to see her before, shall never rest till I get at her now.

*Serg.* But how, without a blow-up ?

*Capt.* Let me see ; how shall we manage it ?

*Serg.* The more difficult the enterprise, the more glory in success, you know, in love as in war.

*Capt.* I have it !

*Serg.* Well, sir ?

*Capt.* You shall pretend—but no, here comes one will serve my turn better.

*Enter REBOLLEDO and CHISPA.*

*Reb. (to CHISPA).* There he is ; now if I can get him into a good humour.

*Chis.* Speak up then, like a man.

*Reb.* I wish I'd some of your courage ; but don't you leave me while I tackle him. Please your Honour—

*Capt. (to Sergeant).* I tell you I've my eye on Rebolledo to do him a good turn ; I like his spirit.

*Serg.* Ah, he's one of a thousand.

*Reb. (aside).* Here's luck ! Please your Honour—

*Capt.* Oh, Rebolledo — Well, Rebolledo, what is it ?

*Reb.* You may know I am a gentleman who has, by ill luck, lost all his estate ; all that ever I had, have, shall have, may have, or can have, through all the conjugation of the verb “*to have.*” And I want your Honour—

*Capt.* Well ?

*Reb.* To desire the ensign to appoint me roulette-master to the regiment, so I may pay my liabilities like a man of honour.

*Capt.* Quite right, quite right ; I will see it done.

*Chis.* Oh, brave captain ! Oh, if I only live to hear them all call me Madam Roulette !

*Reb.* Shall I go at once and tell him ?

*Capt.* Wait. I want you first to help me in a little plan I have.

*Reb.* Out with it, noble captain. Slow said slow sped, you know.

*Capt.* You are a good fellow ; listen. I want to get into that attic there, for a particular purpose.

*Reb.* And why doesn't your Honour go up at once ?

*Capt.* I don't like to do it in a strange house without an excuse. Now look here ; you and I will pretend to quarrel ; I get angry and draw my sword, and you run away up stairs, and I after you, to the attic, that's all ; I'll manage the rest.

*Chis.* Ah, we get on famously.

*Reb.* I understand. When are we to begin ?

*Capt.* Now directly.

*Reb.* Very good. (*In a loud voice.*) This is the reward of my services—a rascal, a pitiful scoundrel, is preferred, when a man of honour—a man who has seen service—

*Chis.* Halloa ! Rebolledo up ! All is not so well.

*Reb.* Who has led you to victory—

*Capt.* This language to me, sir ?

*Reb.* Yes, to you, who have so grossly insulted and defrauded—

*Capt.* Silence ! and think yourself lucky if I take no further notice of your insolence.

*Reb.* If I restrain myself, it is only because you are my captain, and as such—but 'fore God, if my cane were in my hand—

*Chis. (advancing).* Hold ! Hold !

*Capt.* I'll show you, sir, how to talk to me in this way. *(Draws his sword.)*

*Reb.* It is before your commission, not you, I retreat.

*Capt.* That shan't save you, rascal !

*(Pursues REBOLLEDO out.)*

*Chis.* Oh, I shan't be Madam Roulette after 'all. Murder ! murder ! *[Exit, calling.]*

SCENE III. ISABEL'S Garret. ISABEL and INES.

*Isab.* What noise is that on the stairs ?

*Enter REBOLLEDO.*

*Reb.* Sanctuary ! Sanctuary !

*Isab.* Who are you, sir ?

*Enter Captain.*

*Capt.* Where is the rascal ?

*Isab.* A moment, sir ! 'This poor man has flown to our feet for protection ; I appeal to you for it ; and

no man, and least of all an officer, will refuse that to any woman.

*Capt.* I swear no other arm than that of beauty, and beauty such as yours, could have withheld me. (*To REBOLLEDO.*) You may thank the deity that has saved you, rascal.

*Isab.* And I thank you, sir.

*Capt.* And yet ungratefully slay me with your eyes in return for sparing him with my sword.

*Isab.* Oh, sir, do not mar the grace of a good deed by poor compliment, and so make me less mindful of the real thanks I owe you.

*Capt.* Wit and modesty kiss each other, as well they may, in that lovely face. (*Kneels.*)

*Isab.* Heavens ! my father !

*Enter CRESPO and JUAN with swords.*

*Cres.* How is this, sir ? I am alarmed by cries of murder in my house—am told you have pursued a poor man up to my daughter's room ; and, when I get here expecting to find you killing a man, I find you courting a woman.

*Capt.* We are all born subjects to some dominion—soldiers especially to beauty. My sword, though

justly rais'd against this man, as justly fell at this lady's bidding.

*Cres.* No lady, sir, if you please ; but a plain peasant girl—my daughter.

*Juan (aside).* All a trick to get at her. My blood boils. (*Aloud to Captain.*) I think, sir, you might have seen enough of my father's desire to serve you to prevent your requiting him by such an affront as this.

*Cres.* And, pray, who bid thee meddle, boy ? Affront ! what affront ? The soldier affronted his captain ; and if the captain has spared him for thy sister's sake, pray what hast thou to say against it ?

*Capt.* I think, young man, you had best consider before you impute ill intention to an officer.

*Juan.* I know what I know.

*Cres.* What ! you will go on, will you ?

*Capt.* It is out of regard for you I do not chastise him.

*Cres.* Wait a bit ; if that were wanting, 'twould be from his father, not from you.

*Juan.* And, what's more, I wouldn't endure it from any one but my father.

*Capt.* You would not ?

*Juan.* No ! death rather than such dishonour !

*Capt.* What, pray, is a clodpole's idea of honour ?

*Juan.* The same as a captain's—no clodpole no captain, I can tell you.

*Capt.* 'Fore Heaven, I must punish this insolence.  
(*About to strike him.*)

*Cres.* You must do it through me, then.

*Reb.* Eyes right !—Don Lope !

*Capt.* Don Lope !

*Enter DON LOPE.*

*Lope.* How now ? A riot the very first thing I find on joining the regiment ? What is it all about ?

*Capt. (aside).* Awkward enough !

*Cres. (aside).* By the lord, the boy would have held his own with the best of 'em.

*Lope.* Well ! No one answer me ? 'Fore God, I'll pitch the whole house, men, women, and children, out of windows, if you don't tell me at once. Here have I had to trail up your accursed stairs, and then no one will tell me what for.

*Cres.* Nothing, nothing at all, sir.

*Lope.* Nothing ? that would be the worst excuse of all, but swords aren't drawn for nothing ; come, the truth ?

*Capt.* Well, the simple fact is this, Don Lope ; I



am quartered upon this house ; and one of my soldiers—

*Lope.* Well, sir, go on.

*Capt.* Insulted me so grossly I was obliged to draw my sword on him. He ran up here where it seems these two girls live ; and I, not knowing there was any harm, after him ; at which these men, their father or brother, or some such thing, take affront. This is the whole business.

*Lope.* I am just come in time then to settle it. First, who is the soldier that began it with an act of insubordination ?

*Reb.* What, am I to pay the piper ?

*Isab. (pointing to Reb.).* This, sir, was the man who ran up first.

*Lope.* This ? handcuff him !

*Reb.* Me ! my lord ?

*Capt. (aside to Reb.).* Don't blab, I'll bear you harmless.

*Reb.* Oh, I dare say, after being marcht off with my hands behind me like a coward. Noble commander, 'twas the captain's own doing ; he made me pretend a quarrel, that he might get up here to see the women.

*Cres.* I *had* some cause for quarrel, you see.

*Lope.* Not enough to peril the peace of the town for. Halloo there ! beat all to quarters on pain of death. And, to prevent further ill blood here, do you (*to the Captain*) quarter yourself elsewhere till we march. I'll stop here.

*Capt.* I shall of course obey you, sir.

*Cres.* (*to ISABEL*). Get you in. (*Exeunt ISAB. and INES.*) I really ought to thank you heartily for coming just as you did, sir ; else, I'd done for myself.

*Lope.* How so ?

*Cres.* I should have killed this popinjay.

*Lope.* What, sir, a captain in his Majesty's service ?

*Cres.* Ay, a general, if he insulted me.

*Lope.* I tell you, whoever lays his little finger on the humblest private in the regiment, I'll hang him.

*Cres.* And I tell you, whoever points his little finger at my honour, I'll cut him down before hanging.

*Lope.* Know you not, you are bound by your allegiance to submit ?

*Cres.* To all cost of property, yes ; but of honour, no, no, no ! My goods and chattels, ay, and my life—are the king's ; but my honour is my own soul's, and that is—God Almighty's !

*Lope.* 'Fore God, there's some truth in what you say.

*Cres.* 'Fore God, there ought to be, for I've been some years saying it.

*Lope.* Well, well. I've come a long way, and this leg of mine (which I wish the devil who gave it would carry away with him !) cries for rest.

*Cres.* And who prevents its taking some ? the same devil I suppose, who gave you your leg, gave me a bed (which I don't want him to take away again, however) on which your leg may lie if it like.

*Lope.* But did the devil, when he was about it, make your bed as well as give it ?

*Cres.* To be sure he did.

*Lope.* Then I'll unmake it—Heaven knows I'm weary enough.

*Cres.* Heaven rest you then.

*Lope (aside).* Devil or saint alike he echoes me.

*Cres. (aside).* I and Don Lope never shall agree.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *In Zalamea.—Enter DON MENDO and NUÑO.*

*Men.* Who told you all this ?

*Nun.* Ginesa, her wench.

*Men.* That, whether that riot in the house were

by accident or design, the captain has ended by being really in love with Isabel ?

*Nun.* So as he has as little of comfort in his quarters as we of eatable in ours—even under her window, sending her messages and tokens by a nasty little soldier of his.

*Men.* Enough, enough of your poisoned news.

*Nun.* Especially on an empty stomach.

*Men.* Be serious, Nuffo. And how does Isabel answer him ?

*Nun.* As she does you. Bless you, she's meat for your masters.

*Men.* Rascal ! 'This to me ! (*Strikes him.*)

*Nun.* There ! two of my teeth you've knockt out, I believe : to be sure they weren't of much use in your service.

*Men.* By Heaven, I'll do so to that captain, if—

*Nun.* Take care, he's coming, sir.

*Men.* (*aside to Nuño*). This duel shall be *now*—though night be advancing on—before discretion come to counsel milder means. Come, and help me arm.

*Nun.* Lord bless me, sir, what arms have you got except the coat over the door ?

*Men.* In my armoury I doubt not are some pieces of my ancestors that will fit their descendant.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter Captain, Sergeant, and REBOLLEDO.*

*Capt.* I tell you my love is not a fancy ; but a passion, a tempest, a volcano.

*Serg.* What a pity it is you ever set eyes on the girl !

*Capt.* What answer did the servant give you ?

*Serg.* Nay, sir, I have told you.

*Capt.* That a country wench should stand upon her virtue as if she were a lady !

*Serg.* This sort of girls, captain, don't understand gentlemen's ways. If a strapping lout in their own line of life courted them in their own way, they'd hear and answer quick enough. Besides, you really expect too much, that a decent woman should listen after one day's courtship to a lover who is perhaps to leave her to-morrow.

*Capt.* And to-day's sun-setting !

*Serg.* Your own love too, but from one glance—

*Capt.* Is not one spark enough for gunpowder ?

*Serg.* You too, who would have it no country girl could be worth a day's courtship !

*Capt.* Alas, 'twas that was my ruin—running un-awares upon a rock. I thought only to see a splay-footed gawky, and found a goddess. Ah, Rebollo, could you but get me one more sight of her !

*Reb.* Well, captain, you have done me one good turn, and though you had like to run me into danger, I don't mind venturing again for you.

*Capt.* But how ? how ?

*Reb.* Well, now, look here. We've a man in the regiment with a fair voice, and my little Chispa—no one like her for a flash song. Let's serenade at the girl's window ; she must, in courtesy or curiosity, look out ; and then—

*Capt.* But Don Lope is there, and we mustn't wake him.

*Reb.* Don Lope ? When does he ever get asleep with that leg of his, poor fellow ? Besides, you can mix along with us in disguise, so as at least *you* won't come into question.

*Capt.* Well, there is but this chance, if it be but a faint one ; for if we should march to-morrow !—come, let us set about it ; it being, as you say, between ourselves that I have any thing to do with it.

[*Exeunt Captain and Sergeant.*]

*Enter CHISPA.*

*Chis.* He's got it, at any rate.

*Reb.* What's the matter now, Chispa ?

*Chis.* Oh, I mark'd his face for him.

*Reb.* What, a row ?

*Chis.* A fellow there who began to ask questions as to my fair play at roulette—when I was all as fair as day too—I answered him with this. (*Showing a knife.*) Well, he's gone to the barber's to get it dressed.

*Reb.* You still stand kicking when I want to get to the fair. I wanted you with your castanets, not your knife.

*Chis.* Pooh ! one's as handy as the other. What's up now ?

*Reb.* Come with me to quarters ; I'll tell you as we go along. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A trellis of Vines in CRESPO's garden.—*

*Enter CRESPO and DON LOPE.*

*Cres.* Lay the table here. (*To LOPE.*) You'll relish your supper here in the cool, sir. These hot August days at least bring their cool nights by way of excuse.

*Lope.* A mighty pleasant parlour this !

*Cres.* Oh, a little strip my daughter amuses herself with ; sit down, sir. In place of the fine voices and instruments you are us'd to, you must put up

with only the breeze playing on the vine leaves in concert with the little fountain yonder. Even the birds (our only musicians) are gone to bed, and wouldn't sing any the more if I were to wake them. Come sit down, sir, and try to ease that poor leg of yours.

*Lope.* I wish to heaven I could.

*Cres.* Amen !

*Lope.* Well, I can at least bear it. Sit down, Crespo.

*Cres.* Thank you, sir. (*Hesitating.*)

*Lope.* Sit down, sit down, pray.

*Cres.* Since you bid me then, you must excuse my ill manners (*Sits.*)

*Lope.* Humph—Do you know, I am thinking, Crespo, that yesterday's riot rather overset your good ones ?

*Cres.* Ay ?

*Lope.* Why how else is it that you, whom I can scarce get to sit down at all to-day, yesterday plump'd yourself down at once, and in the big chair too ?

*Cres.* Simply because yesterday you *didn't* ask me. To-day you are courteous, and I am shy.

*Lope.* Yesterday you were all thistle and hedgehog ; to-day as soft as silk.

*Cres.* It is only because you yourself were so. I



always answer in the key I'm spoken to ; yesterday you were all out of tune, and so was I. It is my principle to swear with the swearer, and pray with the saint ; all things to all men. So much so as I declare to you your bad leg kept me awake all night. And, by the by, I wish, now we are about it, you would tell me which of your legs it is that ails you : for, not knowing, I was obliged to make sure by swearing at both of mine : and one at a time is quite enough.

*Lope.* Well, Pedro, you will perhaps think I have some reason for my tetchiness, when I tell you that for thirty years during which I have served in the Flemish wars through summer's sun, and winter's frost, and enemy's bullets, I have never known what it is to be an hour without pain.

*Cres.* God give you patience to bear it !

*Lope.* Pish ! can't I give it myself ?

*Cres.* Well, let him leave you alone then !

*Lope.* Devil take patience !

*Cres.* Ah, let him ! he wants it ; only it's too good a job for him.

*Enter JUAN with Table, &c.*

*Juan.* Supper, sir.

*Lope.* But what are my people about, not to see to all this ?

*Cres.* Pardon my having been so bold to tell them I and my family would wait upon you, so, as I hope, you shall want for nothing.

*Lope.* On one condition then, that as you have no fear of your company now, your daughter may join us at supper.

*Cres.* Juan, bid your sister come directly.

[*Exit* JUAN.]

*Lope.* My poor health may quiet all suspicion on that score, I think.

*Cres.* Sir, if you were as lusty as I wish you, I should have no fear. I bid my daughter keep above while the regiment was here because of the nonsense soldiers usually talk to girls. If all were gentlemen like you, I should be the first to make her wait on them.

*Lope (aside).* The cautious old fellow !

*Enter* JUAN, ISABEL, and INES.

*Isab. (to CRESPO).* Your pleasure, sir ?

*Cres.* It is Don Lope's, who honours you by bidding you to sup with him.

*Lope (aside).* What a fair creature ! Nay, 'tis I that honour myself by the invitation.

*Isab.* Let me wait upon you.

*Lope.* Indeed no, unless waiting upon me mean supping with me.

*Cres.* Sit down, sit down, girl, as Don Lope desires you.

[*They sit at table. Guitar heard within.*]

*Lope.* Music too !

*Cres.* None of ours. It must be some of your soldiers, Don Lope.

*Lope.* Ah, Crespo, the troubles and dangers of war must have a little to sweeten them betimes. The uniform sits very tight, and must be let out every now and then.

*Juan.* Yet 'tis a fine life, sir.

*Lope.* Do you think you would like to follow it ?

*Juan.* If I might at your Excellency's side.

### SONG (*within*).

Ah for the red spring rose,  
Down in the garden growing,  
Fading as fast as it blows,  
Who shall arrest its going ?  
Peep from thy window and tell,  
Fairest of flowers, Isabel.

*Lope (aside).* Pebbles thrown up at the window too ! But I'll say nothing, for all sakes. (*Aloud.*) What foolery !

*Cres.* Boys ! Boys ! (*Aside.*) 'T'o call her very name too ! If it weren't for Don Lope—

*Juan (going).* I'll teach them—

*Cres.* Halloa, lad, whither away ?

*Juan.* T'o see for a dish—

*Cres.* They'll see after that. Sit still where thou art.

SONG (*within*).

Wither it would, but the bee  
Over the blossom hovers,  
And the sweet life ere it flee  
With as sweet art recovers,  
Sweetest at night in his cell,  
Fairest of flowers, Isabel.

*Isab. (aside).* How have I deserved this ?

*Lope (knocking over his chair).* This is not to be borne !

*Cres. (upsetting the table).* No more it is !

*Lope.* I meant my leg

*Cres.* And I mine.

*Lope.* I can eat no more, and will to bed.

*Cres.* Very good : so will I.

*Lope.* Good night, good night, to you all.

*All.* Good night, sir.

*Lope (aside).* I'll see to them. [Exit.

*Cres. (aside).* I'll shut the girls up, and then look after 'em. (*Aloud.*) Come, to bed. (*To* JUAN.) Halloo, lad, again ! This is the way to thy room, is it not ? [Exit *severally.*

SCENE III. *Outside CRESPO'S House.—The Captain, Sergeant, REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, &c., with guitars.—At one corner, MENDO in old armour, with NUÑO, observing them.—It is dark.*

*Men. (aside to NUÑO).* You see this ?

*Nun.* And hear it.

*Men.* I am bloodily minded to charge into them at once, and disperse them into chaos ; but I will see if she is guilty of answering them by a sign.

*Capt.* No glance from the window yet !

*Reb.* Who'd stir for a sentimental love song ? Come, Chispa, you can give us one that would make her look out of the grave.

*Chis.* Here am I on my pedestal. Now for it. (*She sings.*)

There once was a certain Sampayo  
 Of Andalusia the fair;  
 A Major he was in the service,  
 And a very fine coat did he wear.  
 And one night, as to-night it might happen,  
 That as he was going his round,  
 With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern—

*Reb.* *Asonante* to “*happen*,” you know.

*Chis.* Don’t put me out, Rebolledo—(*Sings.*)

With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern  
 His lovely Chillona he found.

#### CHORUS.

With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern  
 His lovely Chillona he found.

#### SECOND STANZA.

Now this Garlo, as chronicles tell us,  
 Although rather giv’n to strong drinks,  
 Was one of those terrible fellows  
 Is down on a man ere he winks.  
 And so while the Major all weeping  
 Upbraided his lady unkind,  
 The Garlo behind him came creeping  
 And laid on the Major behind.

#### CHORUS.

The Garlo, &c.

(*During Chorus, DON LOPE and CRESPO have entered at different sides with swords, and begin to lay about them.*)

Cres. What something in this way,  
 perhaps ! } Together.

Lope. After this fashion, may-be !  
*(The Soldiers are driven off.)*

Lope. Well, we're quit of them, except one. But  
 I'll soon settle him.

Cres. One still hanging about. Off with you !

Lope. Off with you, rascal ! *(They fight.)* By Heaven,  
 he fights well !

Cres. By Heaven, a handy chap at his tool.

*Enter JUAN with sword and torch.*

Juan. Where is Don Lope ?

Lope. Crespo !

Cres. Don Lope !

Lope. To be sure, didn't you say you were going  
 to bed ?

Cres. And didn't you ?

Lope. This was my quarrel, not yours.

Cres. Very well, and I come out to help you in it.

*Re-enter Captain and Soldiers with swords.*

1st Sold. We'll soon settle them.

Capt. Don Lope !

Lope. Yes, Don Lope. What is all this, sir ?

*Capt.* The soldiers were singing and playing in the street, sir, doing no offence to any one, but were set upon by some of the town's people, and I came to stop the riot.

*Lope.* You have done well, Don Alvaro, I know your prudence ; however, as there is a grudge on both sides, I shall not visit the town's people this time with further severity ; but for the sake of all parties, order the regiment to march from Zalamea to-morrow—nay, to-day, for it is now dawn. See to it, sir : and let me hear of no such disgraceful riots hereafter.

*Capt.* I shall obey your orders, sir.

*[Exit with soldiers, &c.]*

*Cres. (aside).* Don Lope is a fine fellow ! we shall cog together after all.

*Lope (to CRESPO and JUAN).* You two keep with me, and don't be found alone. *[Exeunt.]*

*Re-enter MENDO, and NUÑO wounded.*

*Men.* 'Tis only a scratch.

*Nun.* A scratch ? Well, I could well have spared that.

*Men.* Ah, what is it compared to the wound in my heart !

*Nun.* I would gladly exchange for all that.



*Men.* Well, he did lay upon your head handsomely, didn't he ?

*Nun.* Ah, and on my tail, too ; while you, under that great shield of yours,— (Drum.)

*Men.* Hark ! what's that ?

*Nun.* The soldiers' reveille. I heard say they were to leave Zalamea to-day.

*Men.* I am glad of it, since they'll carry that detestable captain off with them at all events. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Outside Zalamea.—Enter Captain, Sergeant, REBOLLEDO, and CHISPA.*

*Capt.* March you on, Sergeant, with the troop. I shall lie here till sun-down, and then steal back to Zalamea for one last chance.

*Serg.* If you are resolved on this, sir, you had better do it well attended, for these bumpkins are dangerous, once affronted.

*Reb.* Where, however, (and you ought to tip me for my news,) you have one worst enemy the less.

*Capt.* Who's that ?

*Reb.* Isabel's brother. Don Lope and the lad took a fancy to each other and have persuaded the old father to let him go for a soldier ; and I have only

just met him as proud as a peacock, with all the sinew of the swain and the spirit of the soldier already about him.

*Capt.* All works well ; there is now only the old father at home, who can easily be disposed of. It only needs that he who brought me this good news help me to use it.

*Reb.* Me do you mean, sir ? So I will, to the best of my power.

*Capt.* Good ; you shall go with me.

*Serg.* But if Don Lope should happen on you ?

*Capt.* He is himself obliged to set off to Guadalupe this evening, as the king is already on the road. This I heard from himself when I went to take his orders. Come with me, Sergeant, and settle about the troops marching, and then for my own campaign.

*[Exeunt Captain and Sergeant.]*

*Chis.* And what am I to do, Rebollo, meanwhile ? I shan't be safe alone with that fellow whose face I sent to be sticht by the barber.

*Reb.* Ah, how to manage about that ? You wouldn't dare go with us ?

*Chis.* Not in petticoats : but in the clothes of that run-away stable boy ? I can step into them free of expense.

*Reb.* That's a brave girl.

*Chis.* (*singing*).

And now who shall say  
The love of a soldier's wife lasts but a day?

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. CRESPO'S *Garden Porch*. DON LOPE,  
CRESPO, JUAN.

*Lope.* I have much to thank you for, Crespo, but for nothing so much as for giving me your son for a soldier. I do thank you for that with all my heart.

*Cres.* I am proud he should be your servant.

*Lope.* The king's! the king's!—*my* friend. I took a fancy to him from the first for his spirit and affection to the service.

*Juan.* And I will follow you to the world's end, sir.

*Cres.* Though you must make allowance for his awkwardness at first, sir, remembering he has only had ploughmen for teachers, and plough and pitch-forks for books.

*Lope.* He needs no apology. And now the sun's heat abates towards his setting, I will be off.

*Juan.* I will see for the litter. ' [Exit.

*Enter ISABEL and INES.*

*Isab.* You must not go, sir, without our adieu.

*Lope.* I would not have done so ; nor without asking pardon for much that is past, and even for what I am now about to do. But remember, fair Isabel, 'tis not the price of the gift, but the good will of the giver makes its value. This brooch, though of diamond, becomes poor in your hands, and yet I would fain have you wear it in memory of Don Lope.

*Isab.* I take it ill you should wish to repay us for an entertainment—

*Lope.* No, no, no repayment ; that were impossible if I wished it. A free keepsake of regard.

*Isab.* As such I receive it then, sir. Ah, may I make bold to commit my brother to your kindness ?

*Lope.* Indeed, indeed, you may rely on me.

*Enter JUAN.*

*Juan.* The litter is ready.

*Lope.* Adieu, then, all.

*All.* Adieu, adieu, sir.

*Lope.* Ha, Peter ! who, judging from our first meeting, could have prophesied we should part such good friends ?

*Cres.* I could, sir, had I but known—

*Lope (going).* Well?

*Cres.* That you were at once as good as crazy.  
(*Exit LOPE.*) And now, Juan, before going, let me give thee a word of advice in presence of thy sister and cousin; thou and thy horse will easily overtake Don Lope, advice and all. By God's grace, boy, thou com'st of honourable if of humble stock; bear both in mind, so as neither to be daunted from trying to rise, nor puffed up so as to be sure to fall. How many have done away the memory of a defect by carrying themselves modestly; while others again have gotten a blemish only by being too proud of being born without one. There is a just humility that will maintain thine own dignity, and yet make thee insensible to many a rub that galls the proud spirit. Be courteous in thy manner, and liberal of thy purse; for 'tis the hand to the bonnet and in the pocket that makes friends in this world; of which to gain one good, all the gold the sun breeds in India, or the universal sea sucks down, were a cheap purchase. Speak no evil of women; I tell thee the meanest of them deserves our respect; for of women do we not all come? Quarrel with no one but with good cause; by the Lord, over and over again, when I see

masters and schools of arms among us, I say to myself, "This is not the thing we want at all, *How to fight*, but *Why to fight?* that is the lesson we want to learn." And I verily believe if but one master of the *Why to fight* advertised among us he would carry off all the scholars. Well—enough—You have not (as you once said to me) my advice this time on an empty stomach—a fair outfit of clothes and money—a good horse—and a good sword—these, together with Don Lope's countenance, and my blessing—I trust in God to live to see thee home again with honour and advancement on thy back. My son, God bless thee ! There—And now go—for I am beginning to play the woman.

*Juan.* Your words will live in my heart, sir, so long as it lives. (*He kisses his father's hand.*) Sister ! (*He embraces her.*)

*Isab.* Would I could hold you back in my arms !

*Juan.* Adieu, cousin !

*Ines.* I can't speak.

*Cres.* Be off, else I shall never let thee go—and my word is given !

*Juan.* God bless you all ! [*Exit.*]

*Isab.* Oh, you never should have let him go, sir.

*Cres.* (*aside*). I shall do better now. (*Aloud.*)

Pooh, why, what the deuce could I have done with him at home here all his life—a lout—a scape-grace perhaps. Let him go serve his king.

*Isab.* Leaving us by night too !

*Cres.* Better than by day, child, at this season—  
Pooh !— (*Aside.*) I must hold up before them.

*Isab.* Come, sir, let us in.

*Ines.* No, no, cousin, e'en let us have a little fresh air now the soldiers are gone.

*Cres.* True—and here I may watch my Juan along the white, white road. Let us sit. (*They sit.*)

*Isab.* Is not this the day, sir, when the Town Council elects its officers ?

*Cres.* Ay, indeed, in August—so it is. And indeed this very day.

(*As they talk together the Captain, Sergeant, REBOLLEDO, and CHISPA steal in.*)

*Capt. (whispering).* 'Tis she ! you know our plan ;  
I seize her, and you look to the others.

*Isab.* What noise is that ?

*Ines.* Who are these ?

(*The Captain seizes and carries off ISABEL—the Sergeant and REBOLLEDO seize CRESPO.*)<sup>o</sup>

*Isab.* (*within*). My father ! My father !

*Cres.* Villains ! A sword ! A sword !

*Reb.* Kill him at once.

*Serg.* No, no.

*Reb.* We must carry him off with us then, or his cries will rouse the town. [*Exeunt, carrying CRESPO.*]

### ACT III

SCENE I. *A Wood near Zalamea. It is dark.—Enter*  
ISABEL.

*Isab.* Oh never, never might the light of day arise and show me to myself in my shame ! Oh, fleeting morning star, mightest thou never yield to the dawn that even now presses on thy azure skirts ! And thou, great Orb of all, do thou stay down in the cold ocean foam ; let night for once advance her trembling empire into thine ! For once assert thy voluntary power to hear and pity human misery and prayer, nor hasten up to proclaim the vilest deed that Heaven, in revenge on man, has written on his guilty annals ! Alas ! even as I speak, thou liftest thy bright, inexorable face above the hills ! Oh ! horror ! What shall



I do ? whither turn my tottering feet ? Back to my own home ? and to my aged father, whose only joy it was to see his own spotless honour spotlessly reflected in mine, which now—And yet if I return not, I leave calumny to make my innocence accomplice in my own shame ! Oh that I had stayed to be slain by Juan over my slaughter'd honour ! But I dared not meet his eyes even to die by his hand. Alas !—Hark ! What is that noise ?

*Crespo (within).* Oh in pity slay me at once !

*Isab.* One calling for death like myself ?

*Cres.* Whoever thou art—

*Isab.* That voice ! [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *Another place in the Wood.* CRESPO tied to a tree.—Enter to him ISABEL.

*Isab.* My father !

*Cres.* Isabel ! Unbind these cords, my child.

*Isab.* I dare not—I dare not yet, lest you kill before you hear my story—and you must hear that.

*Cres.* No more, no more ! Misery needs no remembrancer.

*Isab.* It must be.

*Cres.* Alas ! Alas !

*Isab.* Listen for the last time. You know how, sitting last night under the shelter of those white hairs in which my maiden youth had grown, those wretches, whose only law is force, stole upon us. He who had feign'd that quarrel in our house, seizing and tearing me from your bosom as a lamb from the fold, carried me off; my own cries stifled, yours dying away behind me, and yet ringing in my ears like the sound of a trumpet that has ceas'd!—till here, where out of reach of pursuit,—all dark—the very moon lost from heaven—the wretch began with passionate lies to excuse his violence by his love—his love!—I implored, wept, threatened, all in vain—the villain—But my tongue will not utter what I must weep in silence and ashes for ever! Yet let these quivering hands and heaving bosom, yea, the very tongue that cannot speak, speak loudliest! Amid my shrieks, entreaties, imprecations, the night began to wear away and dawn to creep into the forest. I heard a rustling in the leaves; it was my brother—who in the twilight understood all without a word—drew the sword you had but just given him—they fought—and I, blind with terror, shame, and anguish, fled till—till at last I fell before your feet, my father, to tell you my story before I die! And now I undo the cords that keep your hands from

my wretched life. So—it is done ! and I kneel before you—your daughter—your disgrace and my own. Avenge us both ; and revive your dead honour in the blood of her you gave life to !

*Cres.* Rise, Isabel ; rise, my child. God has chosen thus to temper the cup that prosperity might else have made too sweet. It is thus he writes instruction in our hearts : let us bow down in all humility to receive it. Come, we will home, my Isabel, lean on me. (*Aside.*) 'Fore Heaven, an' I catch that captain ! (*Aloud.*) Come, my girl ! Courage ! so.

*Voice (within).* Crespo ! Peter Crespo !

*Cres.* Hark !

*Voice.* Peter ! Peter Crespo !

*Cres.* Who calls ?

*Enter Notary.*

*Not.* Peter Crespo ! Oh, here you are at last !

*Cres.* Well ?

*Not.* Oh, I've had a rare chase. Come—a largess for my news. The Corporation have elected you Mayor !

*Cres.* Me !

*Not.* Indeed. And already you are wanted in your office. The king is expected almost directly through the town ; and, beside that, the captain who disturbed us all so yesterday has been brought back wounded—mortally, it is thought—but no one knows by whom.

*Cres. (to himself).* And so when I was meditating revenge, God himself puts the rod of justice into my hands ! How shall I dare myself outrage the law when I am made its keeper ? (*Aloud.*) Well, sir, I am very grateful to my fellow-townsmen for their confidence.

*Not.* They are even now assembled at the town-hall, to commit the wand to your hands ; and indeed, as I said, want you instantly.

*Cres.* Come then.

*Isab.* Oh, my father !

*Cres.* Ay, who can now see that justice is done you. Courage ! Come. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A Room in Zalamea.—Enter the Captain wounded, and Sergeant.*

*Capt.* It was but a scratch after all. Why on earth bring me back to this confounded place ?

*Serg.* Who could have known it was but a scratch

till 'twas cured ? Would you have liked to be left to bleed to death in the wood ?

*Capt.* Well, it is cured however : and now to get clear away before the affair gets wind. Are the others here ?

*Serg.* Yes, sir.

*Capt.* Let us be off then before these fellows know ; else we shall have to fight for it.

*Enter REBOLLEDO.*

*Reb.* Oh, sir, the magistrates are coming !

*Capt.* Well, what's that to me ?

*Reb.* I only say they are at the door.

*Capt.* All the better. It will be their duty to prevent any riot the people might make if they knew of our being here.

*Reb.* They know, and are humming about it through the town.

*Capt.* I thought so. The magistrates must interfere, and then refer the cause to a court martial, where, though the affair is awkward, I shall manage to come off.

*Cres. (within).* Shut the doors ; any soldier trying to pass, cut him down !

*Enter CRESPO, with the wand of office in his hand,  
Constables, Notary, &c.*

*Capt.* Who is it dares give such an order ?

*Cres.* And why not ?

*Capt.* Crespo ! Well, sir. The stick you are so proud of has no jurisdiction over a soldier.

*Cres.* For the love of Heaven don't discompose yourself, captain ; I am only come to have a few words with you, and, if you please, alone.

*Capt.* Well then, (*to soldiers, &c.*) retire awhile.

*Cres. (to his people).* And you—but hark ye ; remember my orders. [*Exeunt Notary, Constables, &c.*

*Cres.* And now, sir, that I have used my authority to make you listen, I will lay it by, and talk to you as man to man. (*He lays down the wand.*) We are alone, Don Alvaro, and can each of us vent what is swelling in his bosom ; in mine at least, till it is like to burst !

*Capt.* Well, sir ?

*Cres.* Till last night (let me say it without offence) I knew not, except perhaps my humble birth, a single thing fortune had left me to desire. Of such estate as no other farmer in the district ; honoured and esteemed (as now appears) by my fellow-towns-

men, who neither envied me my wealth, nor taunted me as an upstart ; and this even in a little community, whose usual, if not worst, fault it is to canvass each other's weaknesses. I had a daughter too—virtuously and modestly brought up, thanks to her whom heaven now holds ! Whether fair, let what has passed—But I will leave what I may to silence—would to God I could leave all, and I should not now be coming on this errand to you ! But it may not be :—you must help time to redress a wound so great, as, in spite of myself, makes cry a heart not used to overflow. I must have redress. And how ? The injury is done—by you : I might easily revenge myself for so public and shameful an outrage, but I would have retribution, not revenge. And so, looking about, and considering the matter on all sides, I see but one way which perhaps will not be amiss for either of us. It is this. You shall forthwith take all my substance, without reserve of a single farthing for myself or my son, only what you choose to allow us ; you shall even brand us on back or forehead, and sell us like slaves or mules by way of adding to the fortune I offer you—all this, and what you will beside, if only you will with it take my daughter to wife, and restore the honour you have robbed. You will not surely eclipse

your own in so doing ; your children will still be your children if my grandchildren ; and 'tis an old saying in Castile, you know, that, "'Tis the horse redeems the saddle." This is what I have to propose. Behold, (*he kneels,*) upon my knees I ask it—upon my knees, and weeping such tears as only a father's anguish melts from his frozen locks ! And what is my demand ? But that you should restore what you have robbed : so fatal for us to lose, so easy for you to restore ; which I could myself now wrest from you by the hand of the law, but which I rather implore of you as a mercy on my knees !

*Capt.* You have done at last ? Tiresome old man ! You may think yourself lucky I do not add your death, and that of your son, to what you call your dishonour. 'Tis your daughter saves you both ; let that be enough for all. As to the wrong you talk of, if you would avenge it by force, I have little to fear. As to your magistrate's stick there, it does not reach my profession at all.

*Cres.* Once more I implore you—

*Capt.* Have done—have done !

*Cres.* Will not these tears—

*Capt.* Who cares for the tears of a woman, a child, or an old man ?



*Cres.* No pity ?

*Capt.* I tell you I spare your life, and your son's : pity enough.

*Cres.* Upon my knees, asking back my own at your hands that robbed me ?

*Capt.* Nonsense !

*Cres.* Who could extort it if I chose ?

*Capt.* I tell you you could not.

*Cres.* 'There is no remedy then ?

*Capt.* Except silence, which I recommend you as the best.

*Cres.* You are resolved ?

*Capt.* I am.

*Cres. (rising, and resuming his wand).* Then, by God, you shall pay for it ! Ho there !

*Enter Constables, &c.*

*Capt.* What are these fellows about ?

*Cres.* Take this captain to prison.

*Capt.* To prison ! you can't do it.

*Cres.* We'll see.

*Capt.* Am I a bonâ fide officer or not ?

*Cres.* And am I a straw magistrate or not  
Away with him !

*Capt.* The king shall hear of this.

*Cres.* He shall—doubt it not—perhaps to-day ; and shall judge between us. By the by, you had best deliver up your sword before you go.

*Capt.* My sword !

*Cres.* Under arrest, you know.

*Capt.* Well—take it with due respect then.

*Cres.* Oh yes, and you too. Hark ye, (*to Constable, &c.*) carry the captain with due respect to Bridewell ; and there with due respect clap on him a chain and hand-cuffs ; and not only him, but all that were with him, (all with due respect,) respectfully taking care they communicate not together. For I mean with all due respect to examine them on the business, and if I get sufficient evidence, with the most infinite respect of all, I'll wring you by the neck till you're dead, by God !

*Capt.* Set a beggar on horseback !

[*They carry him off.*]

*Enter Notary and others with REBOLLEDO, and CHISPA in boy's dress.*

*Not.* This fellow and the page are all we could get hold of. The other got off.

*Cres.* Ah, this is the rascal who sung. I'll make him sing on t'other side of his mouth.

*Reb.* Why, is singing a crime, sir ?

*Cres.* So little that I've an instrument shall make you do it as you never did before. Will you confess ?

*Reb.* What am I to confess ?

*Cres.* What pass'd last night ?

*Reb.* Your daughter can tell you that better than I.

*Cres.* Villain, you shall die for it ! [Exit.

*Chis.* Deny all, Rebollo, and you shall be the hero of a ballad I'll sing.

*Not.* And you too were of the singing party ?

*Chis.* Ah, ah, and if I was, you can't put me to the question.

*Not.* And why not, pray ?

*Chis.* The law forbids you.

*Not.* Oh, indeed, the law ? How so, pray ?

*Chis.* Because I'm in the way ladies like to be who love Rebollo. [Exeunt, carried off, &c.

SCENE IV. *A Room in CRESPO's House.*—Enter JUAN pursuing ISABEL with a dagger.

*Isab.* Help, help, help ! [Exit.

*Juan.* You must not live !

*Enter CRESPO, who arrests him.*

*Cres.* Hold ! What is this ?

*Juan.* My father ! To avenge our shame—

*Cres.* Which is to be avenged by other means, and not by you. How come you here ?

*Juan.* Sent back by Don Lope last night, to see after some missing soldiers, on approaching the town I heard some cries—

*Cres.* And drew your sword on your officer, whom you wounded, and are now under arrest from me for doing it.

*Juan.* Father !

*Cres.* And Mayor of Zalamea. Within there !

*Enter Constables.*

Take him to prison.

*Juan.* Your own son, sir ?

*Cres.* Ay, sir, my own father, if he transgressed the law I am made guardian of. Off with him !  
(*They carry off JUAN.*) So I shall keep him out of harm's way at least. And now for a little rest. (*He lays by his wand.*)

*Lope (calling within).* Stop ! Stop !

*Cres.* Who's that calling without ? Don Lope !

*Enter LOPE.*

*Lope.* Ay, Peter, and on a very confounded busi-

ness too. But at least I would not put up any where but at your friendly house.

*Cres.* You are too good. But, indeed, what makes you back, sir, so suddenly ?

*Lope.* A most disgraceful affair ; the greatest insult to the service ! One of my soldiers overtook me on the road, flying at full speed, and told me— Oh, the rascal !

*Cres.* Well, sir ?

*Lope.* That some little pettifogging Mayor of the place had got hold of a captain in my regiment, and put him in prison ! In prison ! 'Fore Heaven, I never really felt this confounded leg of mine till to-day, that it prevented me jumping on horseback at once to punish this trumpery Jack-in-office as he deserves. But here I am, and, by the Lord, I'll thrash him within an inch of his life !

*Cres.* You will ?

*Lope.* Will I !

*Cres.* But will he stand your thrashing ?

*Lope.* Stand it or not, he shall have it.

*Cres.* Besides, might your captain happen to deserve what he met with ?

*Lope.* And, if he did, I am his judge, not a trumpery mayor.

*Cres.* This mayor is an odd sort of customer to deal with, I assure you.

*Lope.* Some obstinate clodpole, I suppose.

*Cres.* So obstinate, that if he's made up his mind to hang your captain, he'll do it.

*Lope.* Will he? I'll see to that. And if you wish to see too, only tell me where I can find him.

*Cres.* Oh, close here.

*Lope.* You know him?

*Cres.* Very well, I believe.

*Lope.* And who is it?

*Cres.* Peter Crespo. (*Takes his wand.*)

*Lope.* By God, I suspected it.

*Cres.* By God, you were right.

*Lope.* Well, Crespo, what's said is said.

*Cres.* And, Don Lope, what's done is done.

*Lope.* I tell you, I want my captain.

*Cres.* And I tell you, I've got him.

*Lope.* Do you know he is the king's officer?

*Cres.* Do you know he ravished my daughter?

*Lope.* That you are out-stripping your authority in meddling with him?

*Cres.* Not more than he his in meddling with me.

*Lope.* Do you know my authority supersedes yours?

*Cres.* Do you know I tried first to get him to do

me justice with no authority at all, but the offer of all my estate ?

*Lope.* I tell you, I'll settle the business for you.

*Cres.* And I tell you I never leave to another what I can do for myself.

*Lope.* I tell you once more and for all, I must have my man.

*Cres.* And I tell you once more and for all, you shall—when you have cleared him of the depositions.

*Lope.* The depositions ! What are they ?

*Cres.* Oh, only a few sheets of parchment tagged together with the evidence of his own soldiers against him.

*Lope.* Pooh ! I'll go myself, and take him from the prison.

*Cres.* Do, if you like an arquebuss ball through your body.

*Lope.* I am accustomed to that. But I'll make ure. Within there !

*Enter Orderly.*

Have the regiment to the market-place directly under arms, I'll see if I'm to have my prisoner or not. *[Exit.*

*Cres.* And I—Hark ye !

*[Exit, whispering to a Constable.*

SCENE V. *Before the Prison in Zalamea.—A Street in the centre.—Enter on one side DON LOPE with Troops ; at the other, before the Prison, Labourers, Constables, &c., armed ; and afterward, CRESPO.*

*Lope.* Soldiers, there is the prison where your captain lies. If he be not given up instantly at my last asking, set fire to the prison ; and, if further resistance be made, to the whole town.

*Cres.* Friends and fellow-townsmen, there is the prison where lies a rascal capitally convicted—

*Lope.* They grow stronger and stronger. Forward, men, forward ! (*As the Soldiers are about to advance, trumpets and shouts of " God save the King," within.*)

*Lope.* The king !

*All.* The king !

*Enter KING PHILIP II. through centre Street, with Trains &c. Shouting, Trumpets, &c.*

*King.* What is all this ?

*Lope.* 'Tis well your Majesty came so suddenly, or you would have had one of your whole towns by way of bonfire on your progress.

*King.* What has happened ?



*Lope.* The mayor of this place has had the impudence to seize a captain in your Majesty's service, clap him in prison, and refuses to surrender him to me, his commander.

*King.* Where is this mayor ?

*Cres.* Here, so please your Majesty.

*King.* Well, Mr. Mayor, what have you to offer in defence ?

*Cres.* These papers, my Liege : in which this same captain is clearly proved guilty, on the evidence of his own soldiers, of carrying off and violating a maiden in a desolate place, and refusing her the satisfaction of marriage though peaceably entreated to it by her father with the endowment of all his substance.

*Lope.* This same mayor, my Liege, is the girl's father.

*Cres.* What has that to do with it ? If another man had come to me under like circumstances, should I not have done him like justice ? To be sure. And therefore, why not do for my own daughter what I should do for another's ? Besides, I have just done justice against my own son for striking his captain ; why should I be suspected of straining it in my daughter's favour ? But here is the process ; let

his Majesty see for himself if the case be made out. The witnesses are at hand too ; and if they or any one can prove I have suborned any evidence, or any way acted with partiality to myself, or malice to the captain, let them come forward, and let my life pay for it instead of his.

*King (after reading the papers).* I see not but the charge is substantiated : and 'tis indeed a heavy one. Is there any one here to deny these depositions ? (*Silence.*) But, be the crime proved, *you* have no authority to judge or punish it. You must let the prisoner go.

*Cres.* You must send for him then, please your Majesty. In little towns like this, where public officers are few, the deliberative is forced sometimes to be the executive also.

*King.* What do you mean ?

*Cres.* Your Majesty will see. (*The prison gates open, and the Captain is seen within, garrotted in a chair.*)

*King.* And you have dared, sir !—

*Cres.* Your Majesty said the sentence was just ; and what is well said cannot be ill done.

*King.* Could you not have left it for my imperial Court to execute ?

*Cres.* All your Majesty's justice is only one great

body with many hands ; if a thing be to be done, what matter by which ? Or what matter erring in the inch, if one be right in the ell ?

*King.* At least you might have beheaded him, as an officer and a gentleman.

*Cres.* Please your Majesty, we have so few *Hidalgos* hereabout, that our executioner is out of practice at beheading. And this, after all, depends on the dead gentleman's taste ; if he don't complain, I don't think any one else need for him.

*King.* Don Lope, the thing is done ; and, if unusually, not unjustly—Come, order all your soldiers away with me toward Portugal ; where I must be with all despatch. For you—(to *CRESPO*,) what is your name ?

*Cres.* Peter *Crespo*, please your Majesty.

*King.* Peter *Crespo*, then, I appoint you perpetual Mayor of Zalamea. And so farewell.

[*Exit with Train.*]

*Cres. (kneeling).* God save your Highness !

*Lope.* Friend Peter, his Highness came just in time.

*Cres.* For your captain, do you mean ?

*Lope.* Come now—confess, wouldn't it have been better to have given up the prisoner, who, at my

instance, would have married your daughter, saved her reputation, and made her wife of an Hidalgo ?

*Cres.* Thank you, Don Lope, she has chosen to enter a convent and be the bride of one who is no respecter of Hidalgos.

*Lope.* Well, well, you will at least give me up the other prisoners, I suppose ?

*Cres.* Bring them out. (JUAN, REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, brought out.)

*Lope.* Your son too !

\**Cres.* Yes, 'twas he wounded his captain, and I must punish him.

*Lope.* Come, come, you have done enough—at least give *him* up to his commander.

*Cres.* Eh ? well, perhaps so ; I'll leave his punishment to you.

With which now this true story ends—

Pardon its many errors, friends.

---

Mr. Ticknor thinks Calderon took the hint of this play from Lope de Vega's "Wise Man at Home" ; and he quotes (though without noticing this coincidence) a reply of Lope's hero to some one advising him to assume upon his wealth, that is much of a piece with Crespo's answer to Juan on a like score in the first act of this piece. Only that in Lope the answer *is* an

answer : which, as Juan says, in Calderon it is not ; so likely to happen with a borrowed answer.

This is Mr. Ticknor's version from the older play :

He that was born to live in humble state  
Makes but an awkward knight, do what you will.  
My father means to die as he has liv'd,  
The same plain collier that he always was ;  
And I too must an honest ploughman die.  
'Tis but a single step or up or down ;  
For men there must be that will plough or dig,  
And when the vase has once been fill'd, be sure  
'Twill always savour of what first it held.

I must observe of the beginning of Act III., that in this translation Isabel's speech is intentionally reduced to prose, not only in measure of words, but in some degree of idea also. It would have been far easier to make at least verse of almost the most elevated and purely beautiful piece of Calderon's poetry I know ; a speech (the beginning of it) worthy of the Greek Antigone, which, after two Acts of homely talk, Calderon has put into his *Labradora's* mouth. This, admitting for all culmination of passion, and Spanish passion, must excuse my tempering it to the key in which (measure only kept) Calderon himself sets out.

**BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER**

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DON ALONSO.

DONNA CLARA, } *his Daughters.*  
DONNA EUGENIA, }

DON TORRIBIO, *his Nephew.*

MARI NUÑO, } *his Servants.*  
BRIGIDA, }  
OTAÑEZ, }

DON FELIX, } *Gallants.*  
DON JUAN, }  
DON PEDRO, }

HERNANDO, *Don Felix's Servant.*

# BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room in DON ALONSO's House at Madrid.*

—*Enter ALONSO and OTAÑEZ meeting.*

**O**TAN. My own dear master !  
Alon. Welcome, good Otañez,  
My old and trusty servant !

Otan. Have I liv'd  
To see what I so long have long'd to see.  
My dear old master home again !

Alon. You could not  
Long for 't, Otañez, more than I myself.  
What wonder, when my daughters, who, you know,  
Are the two halves that make up my whole heart,  
Silently call'd me home, and silently  
(For maiden duty still gagg'd filial love)  
Out of the country shade where both have grown,  
Urg'd me to draw the blossom of their youth



Where it might ripen in its proper day.

*Otan.* Indeed, indeed, sir. Oh that my dear lady  
Were but alive to see this happy hour !

*Alon.* Nay, good Otañez, mar it not recalling  
What, ever sleeping in the memory,  
Needs but a word to waken into tears.  
God have her in his keeping ! He best knows  
How I have suffer'd since the king, my master,  
Dispatching me with charge to Mexico,  
I parted from her ne'er to see her more ;  
And now come back to find her gone for ever !  
You know 'twas not the long and roaring seas  
Frighted her for herself, but these two girls—  
For them she stay'd—and full of years and honour  
Died, when God will'd ! and I have hasten'd home  
Well as I may, to take into my hands  
The charge death slipp'd from hers.

*Otan.* Your own good self !  
Though were there ever father, who could well  
Have left that charge to others, it was you  
Your daughters so religiously brought up  
In convent with their aunt at Alcalá.  
Well, you are come, and God be prais'd for it !  
And, at your bidding, here are they, and I,  
And good old Mari Nuño—all come up

To meet you at Madrid. I could not wait.  
The coach's slower pace, but must spur on  
To kiss my old master's hand.

*Alon.*    Myself had gone  
To meet them ; but despatches of the king's  
Prevented me. They're well ?

*Voices (within).* Make way there—way !

*Otan.* And lovely as the dawn. And hark ! are  
here

**To answer for themselves.**

*Enter CLARA, EUGENIA, MARI NUÑO, as from travel.*

*Clara (kneeling).* Sir, and my father—by my daily  
prayers  
Heav'n, won at last in suffering me to kiss  
These honour'd hands, leaves me no more to ask,  
Than at these honour'd feet to die,  
With its eternal blessing afterward.

*Eug.* And I, my father, grateful as I am  
To Heav'n, for coming to your feet once more,  
Have yet this more to ask—to live with you  
For many, many happy years to come !

*Alon.* Oh, not in vain did nature fix the heart  
In the mid bosom, like a sun to move  
Each circling arm with equal love around !

412 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT I

Come to them—one to each—and take from me  
Your lives anew. God bless you !  
Come, we are here together in Madrid,  
And in the sphere where you were born to move.  
This is the house that is to be your own  
Until some happy lover call you his ;  
Till which I must be father, lover, husband,  
In one. Brigida !

*Enter* BRIGIDA.

*Brig.* Sir ?

*Alon.* My daughters' rooms  
Are ready ?

*Brig.* Ay, sir, as the sky itself  
For the sun's coming.

*Alon.* Go and see them then,  
And tell me how you like what I have bought,  
And fitted up for your reception.

*Clara.* I thank you, sir, and bless this happy day,  
Though leaving my lov'd convent far away.

*Eug. (aside).* And I twice bless it, that no longer hid  
In a dull cell, I come to see Madrid.

[*Exeunt* CLARA and EUGENIA.

*Mari Nuño.* Now the young ladies, sir, have had  
their turn,

Shall not I kiss your hand ?

*Alon.* Oh, welcome too,  
 Good Mari Nuño ; who have been so long  
 A mother to them both. And, by the bye,  
 Good Mari Nuño, now we are alone,  
 I'd hear from you, who know them both so well,  
 Their several characters and dispositions,  
 And not, as 'twere, come blindfold to the charge  
 That Heav'n has laid upon me.

*Mari.* You say well, sir.  
 Well, I might say at once, and truly too,  
 That nothing need be said in further praise  
 But that they are your daughters. But to pass,  
 Lest you should think I flatter,  
 From general to individual,  
 And to begin with the eldest, Donna Clara ;  
 Eldest in years and in discretion too,  
 Indeed the very pearl of prudence, sir,  
 And maidenly reserve ; her eyes still fixt  
 On earth in modesty, or heav'n in prayer ;  
 As gentle as a lamb, almost as silent ;  
 And never known to say an angry word :  
 And such her love of holy quietude,  
 Unless at your desire, would never leave  
 Her cloister and her missal. She's, in short,

An angel upon earth, whom to be near  
 And wait on, one would sell oneself a slave.  
 So much for her. Donna Eugenia,  
 Though unexceptionable in heart and head,  
 As, God forgive me, any child of yours  
 Must be, is different,—not for me to say  
 Better or worse,—but very different :  
 Of a quick spirit, loving no control ;  
 Indeed, as forward as the other shy ;  
 Quick to retort, and sharply ; so to speak,  
 Might sometimes try the patience of a saint ;  
 Longing to leave a convent for the world,  
 'To see and to be seen ; makes verses too ;  
 Would not object, I think, to have them made  
 (Or love, may be) to her—you understand ;  
 Not that I mean to say—

*Alon.*

Enough, enough.

Thanks for your caution as your commendation :  
 How could I fortify against weak points  
 Unless I knew of them ? And, to this end,  
 Although Eugenia be the younger sister,  
 I'll see her married first ; husband and children  
 The best specific for superfluous youth :  
 And to say truth, good Mari, the very day,  
 Of my arrival hither, I despatch'd

A letter to my elder brother's son,  
 Who still maintains our dwindled patrimony  
 Up in the mountains, which I would reclaim,  
 Or keep it rather in its lawful line,  
 By an alliance with a child of mine.  
 All falls out luckily. Eugenia  
 Wedded to him shall make herself secure,  
 And the two stems of Cuadrillos so  
 Unite and once more flourish, at a blow. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *A Room in DON FELIX's House ; DON FELIX,  
 and HERNANDO dressing him.*

*Hern.* Such fine ladies, sir, come to be our neighbours.

*Fel.* So they ought to be, such a noise as they made in coming.

*Hern.* One of them already betroth'd, however.

*Fel.* So let her, and married too, if she would only let me sleep quiet. But what kind of folks are they ?

*Hern.* Oh, tip-top. Daughters of the rich old Indian who has bought the house and gardens opposite, and who will give them all his wealth when they

marry, which they say he has brought them to Madrid expressly to do.

*Fel.* But are they handsome ?

*Hern.* I thought so, sir, as I saw them alighting.

*Fel.* Rich and handsome, then ?

*Hern.* Yes, sir.

*Fel.* Two good points in a woman, at all events, of which I might profit, such opportunities as I have.

*Hern.* Have a care, sir, for the old servant who told me this, told me also that the papa is a stout fiery old fellow, who'd stick the Great Turk himself if he caught him trifling with his daughters.

*Fel.* That again is not so well ; for though I'm not the great Turk, I've no mind to share that part of his fortune. But of the two girls, what said your old servant ? who, as such, I suppose told you all that was amiss in them at least.

*Hern.* Well, you shall judge. One, the oldest, is very discreet.

*Fel.* Ah, I told you so.

*Hern.* The other lively.

*Fel.* Come, that sounds better. One can tackle her hand to hand, but the grave one one can only take a long shot at with the eyes.

*Hern.* Whichever it be, I should like to see you yourself hit one of these days, sir.

*Fel.* Me? The woman is not yet cast who will do that. If I meddle with these it is only because they lie so handy.

*Hern.* And handsome as well as handy!

*Fel.* Pooh! I wouldn't climb a wall to pluck the finest fruit in the world. But hark! some one's at the door. See who 'tis.

• *Enter DON JUAN in travelling dress.*

*Juan.* I, Felix, who seeing your door open, could not but walk in without further ado.

*Fel.* You know that it and my heart are ever open to you. Welcome, welcome, Don Juan! all the more welcome for being unexpected: for though I had heard we might one day have you back, I did not think to see you yet.

*Juan.* Why, the truth is I got my pardon sooner than I expected.

*Fel.* Though not than I prayed for. But tell me all about it.

*Juan.* You know I was obliged to fly to Italy after that unlucky duel. Well, there the great duke of Terranova, who (as good luck would have it) was then



going ambassador to Hungary, took a fancy to me, and carried me with him ; and, pleased with what service I did him, interested himself in my fortunes, and one good day, when I was least expecting it, with his own hand put my pardon into mine.

*Fel.* A pardon that never should have needed asking, all of an unlucky quarrel at cards.

*Juan.* So you and the world suppose, Felix : but in truth there was something more behind.

*Fel.* Ah ?

*Juan.* Why the truth is, I was courting a fair lady, and with fair hope of success, though she would not confess it, urging that her father being away at the time, her mother would not consent in his absence. Suddenly I found I had a rival, and took occasion of a casual dispute at cards to wipe out the score of jealousy ; which I did with a vengeance to both of us, he being killed on the spot, and I, forc'd to fly the country, must, I doubt, ere this, have died out of my lady's memory, where only I cared to live.

*Fel.* Ay, you know well enough that in Madrid Oblivion lies in the very lap of Remembrance, whether of love or loathing. I thank my stars I never pinn'd my faith on woman yet.

*Juan.* Still the same sceptic ?

*Fel.* Ay, they are fine things, but my own heart's ease is finer still ; and if one party must be deceived, I hold it right in self-defence it should not be I. But come ; that you may not infect me with your faith, nor I you with my heresy, tell me about your journey.

*Juan.* How could it be otherwise than a pleasant one, such pageants as I had to entertain me by the way ?

*Fel.* Oh, you mean our royal master's nuptials ?

*Juan.* Ay !

*Fel.* I must hear all about them, Juan ; even now, upon the spot.

*Juan.* Well then, you know at least, without my telling you, how great a debt Germany has owed us—

*Enter DON PEDRO hastily.*

*Ped.* My dear Don Felix !

*Fel.* Don Pedro ! By my faith, my door must be the door of heaven, I think ; for all the good keep coming in by't. But how comes your University term so soon over ?

*Ped.* Alas, it's *not* over, but—

*Fel.* Well ?

*Ped.* I'll tell you.

*Juan.* If I be in your way—

*Ped.* No, no, sir, if you are Felix's friend you command my confidence. My story is easily told. A lady I am courting in Alcalá is suddenly come up to Madrid, and I am come after her. And to escape my father's wrath at playing truant, I must beg sanctuary in your house awhile.

*Fel.* And this once will owe me thanks for your entertainment, since I have Don Juan's company to offer you.

*Juan.* Nay, 'tis I have to thank you for Don Pedro's.

*Fel.* Only remember, both of you, that however you may amuse one another, you are not to entertain me with your several hearts and darts. Hernando, get us something to eat ; and till it comes you shall set off rationally at least, Juan, with the account of the royal nuptials you were beginning just as Don Pedro came in.

*Juan.* On condition you afterwards recount to me your rejoicings in Madrid meanwhile.

*Fel.* Agreed.

*Ped.* I come in happy time to hear you both.

*Juan.* You know, as I was saying, what a debt Germany has ow'd us since our fair Maria  
Her title of the Royal Child of Spain

Set in the crown of Hungary—a debt  
They only could repay us as they do,  
Returning us one of the self-same stock,  
So like herself in beauty and desert,  
We seem but taking what we gave away.  
If into Austria's royal hand we gave  
Our royal rose, she now returns us one  
Sprung of the self-same stem, as fair, as sweet  
In maiden graces ; and if double-dyed  
In the imperial purple, yet so fresh,  
Shē scarce has drunk the dawns of fourteen Aprils.  
The marriage contract sign'd, the marriage self  
Delay'd, too long for loyal Spain's desire,  
That like the bridegroom for her coming burn'd,  
(But happiness were hardly happiness  
Limp'd it not late,) till her defective years  
Reach'd their due blossom—Ah, happy defect,  
'That every uncondition'd hour amends !  
At last arose the day—the day of days—  
When from her royal eyrie in the North,  
'The imperial eaglet flew. Young Ferdinand,  
King of Bohemia and Hungary  
Elect, who not in vain Rome's holy hand  
Awaits to bind the laurel round his brow,  
As proxy for our king espous'd her first,

And then, all lover-like, as far as Trent  
Escorted her, with such an equipage  
As when the lords and princes of three realms  
Out-do each other in magnificence  
Of gold and jewel, ransackt from the depths  
Of earth and sea, to glitter in the eye  
Of Him who sees and lights up all from heav'n.  
So, like a splendid star that trails her light  
Far after her, she cross'd fair Italy,  
When Doria, Genoa's great Admiral,  
Always so well-affected to our crown,  
Took charge of her sea-conduct ; which awhile,  
Till winds and seas were fair, she waited for  
In Milan ; till, resolv'd on embarkation,  
The sea, that could not daunt her with his rage,  
Soon as her foot was on his yellow shore,  
Call'd up his Tritons and his Nereids  
Who love and make a calm, to smooth his face  
And still his heaving breast ; on whose blue flood  
The golden galley in defiance burn'd,  
Her crew in wedding pearl and silver drest ;  
Her silken sail and cordage, fluttering  
With myriad flags and streamers of all dye,  
Sway'd like a hanging garden over-head,  
Amid whose blossoms stood the royal bride,

A fairer Venus than did ever float  
Over the seas to her dominions  
Arm'd with the arrows of diviner love.  
Then to the sound of trump and clarion  
The royal galley, and with her forty more  
That follow'd in her wake as on their queen,  
Weigh'd, shook out sail, and dipp'd all oars at once,  
Making the flood clap hands in acclamation ;  
And so with all their streamers, as 'twere spring  
Floating away to other hemispheres,  
Put out to sea ; and touching not the isles  
That gem the midway deep—not from distrust  
Of friendly France in whose crown they are set,  
And who (as mighty states contend in peace  
With courtesies as with hard blows in war)  
Swell'd the triumphal tide with pageantries  
I may not stop to tell—but borne upon,  
And (as I think) bearing, fair wind and wave,  
The moving city on its moving base  
With sail and oar enter'd the Spanish Main,  
Which, flashing emerald and diamond,  
Leap'd round the golden prow that clove between,  
And kiss'd the happy shore that first declin'd  
To meet its mistress. Happy Denia,  
That in her golden sand holds pearly-like

The first impression of that royal foot !  
 I will not tell—let Felix, who was here,  
 And has new breath—how, landed happily,  
 Our loyal Spain—yea, with what double welcome—  
 Receiv'd the niece and consort of our king,  
 Whom, one and both, and both in one, may Heav'n  
 Bless with fair issue, and all happiness,  
 For years and years to come !

*Enter HERNANDO.*

*Hern.* Sir, sir !

*Fel.* Well ?

*Hern.* Your two new neighbours—just come to the window.

*Fel.* Gentlemen, we must waive my story then, for as the proverb goes, "*My Lady first.*" (*He looks out.*) By Heaven, they are divine !

*Juan.* Let me see. (*Aside.*) By Heaven, 'tis she !

*Ped.* Come, it is my turn now. (*Aside.*) Eugenia ! I must keep it to myself.

*Fel.* I scarce know which is handsomest.

*Juan.* Humph ! both pretty girls enough.

*Ped.* Yes, very well.

*Fel.* Listen, gentlemen ; whether handsome, or pretty, or very well, or all three, you must not stare

at them from my window so vehemently ; being the daughters of a friend of mine, and only just come to Madrid.

*Juan. (aside).* That the first thing I should see on returning to Madrid, is she for whose love I left it !

*Ped. (aside.)* That the first thing I see here is what I came for the very purpose of seeing !

*Hernando (entering).* Table is serv'd, sir.

*Fel.* To table, then. I know not how it is with you, gentlemen, but for myself, my appetite is stronger than my love.

*Juan. (aside to FELIX).* You jest as usual ; but I assure you it is one of those very ladies on whom my fortune turns ! *[Exit.*

*Fel.* Adieu to one then.

*Ped.* All this is fun to you, Felix ; but believe me, one of those ladies is she I have followed from Alcalá. *[Exit.*

*Fel.* Adieu to both then—unless indeed you are both of you in love with the same. But, thank God,  
 I that am in love with neither,  
 Need not plague myself for either.  
 The least expense of rhyme or care  
 That man can upon women spare.  
 But they are very handsome nevertheless. *[Exit.*



SCENE III. *An Apartment in DON ALONSO's House.*

—*Enter CLARA and EUGENIA.*

*Clara.* Is't not a pretty house, Eugenia,  
And all about it ?

*Eug.* I dare say you think so.

*Clara.* But do not you then ?

*Eug.* No — to me it  
seems

A sort of out-court and repository,  
Fit but for old Hidalgos and Duennas,  
Too stale and wither'd for the blooming world,  
To wear away in.

*Clara.* I like its quietude ;  
This pretty garden too.

*Eug.* A pretty thing  
To come for to Madrid—a pretty garden !  
I tell you were it fuller of all flowers  
Than is a Dutchman's in his tulip-time,  
I want the lively street whose flowers are shops,  
Carriages, soldiers, ladies, cavaliers,  
Plenty of dust in summer, dirt in winter,  
And where a woman sitting at her blind  
Sees all that passes. Then this furniture !

*Clara.* Well—surely velvet curtains, sofas, chairs,

Rich Indian carpets, beds of Damascene,  
Chandeliers, gilded mirrors, pictures too—  
What would you have, Eugenia ?

*Eug.* All very well,  
But, after all, no marvellous result  
Of ten years spent in golden India.  
Why, one has heard how fine a thing it is  
To be my Lord Mayor's daughter ; what must be,  
Methought, to own a dowry from Peru !  
And when you talk about the furniture,  
Pictures, chairs, carpets, mirrors, and all that—  
'The best of all is wanting.

*Clara.* What is that ?

*Eug.* Why, a coach, woman ! Heav'n and earth,  
a coach !

What use is all the money-bonds and gold  
He has been boasting of in all his letters,  
Unless, now come at last, he plays the part  
We've heard so long rehearsing ?

*Clara.* Not to spare  
Your father even, Eugenia ! For shame !  
'Tis time to tie your roving tongue indeed.  
Consider, too, we are not in the country,  
Where tongue and eyes, Eugenia, may run wild  
Without offence to uncensorious woods ;

But in a city, with its myriad eyes  
Inquisitively turn'd to watch, and tongues  
As free and more malicious than yours  
To tell—where honour's monument is wax,  
And shame's of brass. I know, Eugenia,  
High spirits are not in themselves a crime ;  
But if to men they *seem* so ?—that's the question.  
For it is almost better to do ill  
With a good outward grace than well without ;  
Especially a woman ; most of all  
One not yet married ; whose reputation  
One breath of scandal, like a flake of snow,  
May melt away ; one of those tenderest flowers  
Whose leaves ev'n the warm breath of flattery  
Withers as fast as envy's bitterest wind,  
That surely follows short-liv'd summer praise.  
Ev'n those who praise your beauty, grace, or wit,  
Will be the first, if you presume on them,  
To pull the idol down themselves set up,  
Beginning with malicious whispers first,  
Until they join the storm themselves have rais'd.  
And most if one be giv'n oneself to laugh  
And to make laugh : the world will doubly yearn  
To turn one's idle giggle into tears.  
I say this all by way of warning, sister,

SCENE III] BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER 429

Now we are launcht upon this dangerous sea.  
Consider of it.

*Eug.*           “ Which that all may do  
May Heav'n—” Come, Clara, if the sermon's done,  
Pray finish it officially at once,  
And let us out of church. These homilies  
In favour of defunct proprieties,  
Remind one of old ruff and armour worn  
By Don Punctilio and Lady Etiquette  
A hundred years ago, and past with them  
And all their tedious ancestors for ever.  
I am alive, young, handsome, witty, rich,  
And come to town and mean to have my fling,  
Not caring what malicious people say,  
If nothing true to say against my honour.  
And so with all sail set, and streamers flying,  
(A coach shall be my ship, and I will have it !)  
I mean to glide along the glittering streets  
And down the Prado, as I go along  
Capturing what eyes and hearts I find by the way,  
Heedless of every little breath of scandal  
That such as you turn back affrighted by.  
I'll know the saints' days better than the saints  
Themselves ; the holidays and festivals  
Better than over-done apprentices.

If a true lover comes whom I can like  
 As he loves me, I shall not turn away :  
 As for the rest who flutter round in love,  
 Not with myself, but with my father's wealth,  
 Or with themselves, or any thing but me,  
 You shall see, Clara, how I'll play with them,  
 Till, having kept them on my string awhile  
 For my own sport, I'll e'en turn them adrift  
 And let them go, the laugh all on my side.  
 And therefore when you see—

*Clara.* How shall I dare  
 To see what even now I quake to hear !

*Enter ALONSO.*

*Alon.* Clara ! Eugenia !

*Both.* Sir ?

*Alon.* Good news, good news, my girls ! What think you ? My nephew, Don Torribio Cuadradillos, my elder brother's elder son, head of our family and inheritor of the estate, is coming to visit me ; will be here indeed almost directly. What think you now ?

*Eug. (aside).* One might have thought, from such a flourish of trumpets, the king was coming at least.

*Alon.* Mari Nuño !

*Mari (entering).* Sir ?

*Alon.* Let a chamber be got ready for my nephew, Don Torribio, directly. Brigida !

*Brig. (entering).* Sir ?

*Alon.* See that linen be taken up into Don Torribio's room. Otañez, have dinner ready for my nephew, Don Torribio, directly he arrives. And you two, (*to his daughters,*) I expect you will pay him all attention ; as head of the family, consider. Ay, and if he *should* take a fancy to one of you—I know not he will—but if he *should*, I say, whichever it be, she will take precedence of her sister for ever. (*Aside.*) This I throw out as a bait for Eugenia.

*Eug.* It must be Clara, then, sir, for she is oldest, you know.

*Clara.* Not in discretion and all wife-like qualities, Eugenia.

*Eug.* Clara !

*Alon.* Hark ! in the court !

*Don Torribio (speaking loud within).* Hoy ! good man there ! Can you tell me if my uncle lives here-about ?

*Alon.* 'Tis my nephew, surely !

*Torr. (within).* Why, fellow, I mean of course Don

432      BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT I

Alonso—who has two daughters, by the token I'm to marry one of 'em.

*Alon.* 'Tis he ! I will go and receive him. [*Exit.*

*Torr. (within.)* Very well, then. Hold my stirrup, Lorenzo.

*Eng.* What a figure !

*Enter ALONSO and TORRIBIO.*

*Alon.* My nephew, Don Torribio, giving thanks to Heaven for your safe arrival at my house, I hasten to welcome you as its head.

*Torr.* Ay, uncle, and a head taller, I promise you, than almost anybody in the parish.

*Alon.* Let me introduce your cousins to you, who are so anxious for your acquaintance.

*Torr.* Ah, that's proper of 'em, isn't it ?

*Both.* Welcome, sir.

*Alon.* And how are you, nephew ?

*Torr.* Very tired, I promise you : for the way is long and my horse a rough goer, so as I've lost leather.

*Alon.* Sit down, and rest till they bring dinner.

*Torr.* Sitting an't the way to mend it. But, however—(*Sits.*) Nay, though I be head of the

house, I an't proud—you can all of you sit down too.

*Clara (aside).* Amiable humility !

*Eug. (aside).* No wonder the house is crazy if this be its head !

*Torr.* Well, now I come to look at you, cousins, I may say you are both of you handsome girls, indeed ; which'll put me to some trouble.

*Clara.* How so, cousin ?

*Torr.* Why, didn't you ever hear that if you put an ass between two bundles of hay, he'll die without knowing which to begin on, eh ?

*Alon.* His father's pleasant humour !

*Clara.* A courteous comparison !

*Eug. (aside).* Which holds as far as the ass at least.

*Torr.* Well, there's a remedy. I say, uncle, mustn't cousins get a dispensation before they marry ?

*Alon.* Yes, nephew.

*Torr.* Well, then, when you're about it, you can get two dispensations, and I can marry both my cousins. Aha ! Well, but, uncle, how are you ? I had forgot to ask you that.

*Alon.* Quite well, in seeing you in my house at last, and to reap, I trust, the fruits of all my travel.

*Torr.* Ah, you may say that. Oh, cousins, if you could only see my pedigree and patent, in a crimson



velvet case ; and all my forefathers painted in a row  
—I have it in my saddle bags, and if you'll wait a  
minute—

*Enter MARI NUÑO.*

*Mari.* Dinner's ready.

*Torr.* (*looking at MARI*). Lord a' mercy, uncle,  
what's this ? something you brought from India,  
belike ; does it speak ?

*Alon.* Nay, nephew, 'tis our Duenna.

*Torr.* A what ?

*Alon.* A Duenna.

*Torr.* A tame one ?

*Alon.* Come, come, she tells as dinner's ready.

*Torr.* Yes, if you believe her ; but I've heard say,  
Duennas always lie. However, I'll go and see for  
myself. [*Exit.*

*Clara.* What a cousin !

*Eug.* What a lover !

*Mari.* Foh ! I wonder how the watch came to  
let the plague into the city ! [*Exit.*

*Alon.* You are silent, both of you ?

*Both.* Not I, sir.

*Alon.* I understand you ; Don Torribio

SCENE III] BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER 435.

Pleases you not—Well, he's a little rough ;  
But wait a little ; see what a town life  
Will do for him ; all come up so at first,  
The finest diamonds, you know, the roughest—  
Oh, I rejoice my ancestor's estate  
Shall to my grandchildren revert again !  
For this I tell you—one, I care not which,  
But one of you, shall marry Don Torribio :  
And let not her your cousin does not choose,  
For one more courtly think herself reserv'd ;  
By Heaven she shall marry, if e'er marry,  
One to the full as rough and country-like.  
What, I to see my wealth, so hardly won,  
Squander'd away by some fine town gallant,  
In silks and satins ! see my son-in-law  
Spend an estate upon a hat and feather !  
I tell you I'll not have it. One of you  
Must marry Don Torribio.

[*Exit.*

*Clara.*

I'll die first.

*Eug.* And I'll live an old maid—which much is  
worst ?

---

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Room in DON FELIX's House.*—FELIX and  
HERNANDO ; *to whom Enter JUAN.*

*Fel.* Well, Juan, and how slept you ?

*Juan.* As one must

In your house, Felix ; had not such a thought  
No house can quiet woke me long ere dawn.

*Fel.* Indeed ! How so ?

*Juan.* Felix, the strangest thing—

But now we are alone I'll tell you all.

Last night—the very moment that I saw

That angel at the window, as at Heaven's gate—

The fire that I myself had thought half dead

Under the ashes of so long an absence,

Sprung up anew into full blaze. Alas !

But one brief moment did she dawn on us,

Then set, to rise no more all the evening,

Watch as I would. But day is come again,

And as I think, Felix, the holyday

When our new Queen shall make her solemn entry

Into Madrid ; and she, my other Queen,

Will needs be up—be up and out betimes ;

So I forestall the sun in looking for her,  
And now will to the door beneath her window  
Better to watch her rising.

But, as you love me, not a word of this  
Breathe to Don Pedro.

[*Exit.*

*Fel.* And does he think  
Because his memory of her is quick.  
Hers is of him ? Aha !

*Hern.* Nay, if he like it,  
"Oh, let him be deceiv'd !"

*Fel.* 'Twas wisely said  
By him who self-deception us'd to call  
The cheapest and the dearest thing of all.  
Ha ! here's the other swain ! and now to see  
How he has prosper'd. I begin to think  
My house is turn'd into a Lazar-house  
Of crazy lovers.

*Enter PEDRO.*

Good day, Don Pedro.

*Ped.* As it needs must be  
To one who hails it in your house, and opposite  
My lady's ! Oh, you cannot think, my Felix,  
With what a blessed conscience of all this  
I woke this morning ! I can scarcely believe 't.

438 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT II

Why, in your house, I shall have chance on chance,  
 Nay, certainty of seeing her—*to-day*  
 Most certainly. But I'll go post myself  
 Before the door ; she will be out betimes  
 To mass.

*Fel.* Well, you will find Don Juan there.

*Ped.* Eh ? Well, so much the better, I can do 't  
 With less suspicion, nay, with none at all  
 If you will go with us. Only, Don Felix,  
 Breathe not a word to him about my love.

*As he is going, re-enter JUAN.*

*Fel.* Juan again ?

*Juan.* I only came to ask  
 What church we go to ? (*Aside to FELIX.*) Let us  
 keep at home.

*Fel.* Don Pedro, what say you ?

*Ped.* Oh, where you please.  
 (*Aside.*) Stir not !

*Fel. (aside).* How easy to oblige two friends  
 Who ask the same, albeit with divers ends !  
 (*Aloud.*) What, are your worships both in love, perhaps,  
 As Spanish cavaliers are bound to be,  
 And think I've nothing else to do, forsooth,

Than follow each upon his wildgoose chase ?  
 Forgetting I may take 't into my head  
 To fall in love myself—perhaps with one,  
 Or both, of those fair ladies chance has brought  
 Before my windows. Now I think upon 't,  
 I am, or mean to be, in love with one ;  
 And, to decide with which, I'll e'en wait here  
 Till they both sally forth to church themselves.  
 So, gentlemen, would you my company,  
 I must not go with you, you stay with me.

*Ped.* Willingly.

*Juan.* Oh, most willingly ! (*Aside to FELIX.*)

How well

You manag'd it.

*Ped.* (*aside to FELIX.*) 'Tis just as I could wish.

*Fel.* (*aside.*) And just as I, if thereby I shall learn  
 Whether they love the same ; and, if the same,  
 Whether the one—But come, come ! 'tis too late  
 For wary me to wear love's cap and bells.

*Juan.* Since we must do your bidding on this score,  
 We'll e'en make you do ours upon another,  
 And make you tell us, as you promis'd both,  
 And owe to me—what, when our Queen was landed,  
 You fine folks of Madrid did in her honour.

*Ped.* Ay, if you needs will fetter our free time,

Help us at least to pass it by the story  
You had begun.

*Fel.* Well then, to pick it up  
Where Juan left it for us, on the shore,  
There, when our Queen was landed, as I hear,  
The Countess Medellin, her Chamberlain,  
Of the Cordona family, receiv'd her,  
And the Lord Admiral on the King's part,  
With pomp that needed no excuse of haste,  
And such a retinue (for who claims not  
To be the kinsman, friend, or follower,  
Of such a name ?) as I believe Castile  
Was almost drain'd to follow in his wake.  
Oh, noble house ! in whom the chivalry  
Of courage, blameless worth, and loyalty,  
Is nature's patent of inheritance  
From generation to generation !  
And so through ringing Spain, town after town,  
And every town a triumph, on they pass'd.  
Madrid meanwhile—

*Juan.* Stop, stop ! They're coming out !

*Ped.* Where ! Let me see.

*Juan.* The servant only.

*Fel.* Nay,

They'll follow soon.

*Juan.* Till when, on with your story.

*Fel.* Madrid then, sharing in the general joy  
Of her king's marriage, and with one whose mother  
Herself had nurst—though, as you said, half sick  
Of hope deferr'd, had, at the loyal call,  
That never fails in Spain, drawn to her heart  
The life-blood of the realm's nobility  
To do her honour ; not only when she came,  
But, in anticipation of her coming,  
With such prelusive pomps, as if you turn  
Far up time's stream as history can go,  
In hymeneals less august than these,  
You shall find practis'd—torchéd troop and masque,  
With solemn and preliminary dance,  
Epithalamium and sacrifice,  
Invoking Hymen's blessing. So Madrid,  
Breathing new Christian life in Pagan pomp,  
With such epithalamium as all Spain  
Rais'd up to Heav'n, into sweet thunder tun'd  
Beyond all science by a people's love,  
Began her pageant. First, the nightly masque,  
So fair as I have never seen the like,  
Nor shall again ; nor which, unless you draw  
On your imagination for the type  
Of what I tell, can I depict to you ;



When, to the sound of trumpet and recorder,  
The chiming poles of Spain and Germany  
Beginning, drew the purple mountain down,  
Glittering with veins of ore and silver trees,  
All flower'd with plumes, and taper-starr'd above,  
With monster and volcano breathing fire,  
While to and fro torch-bearing maskers ran  
Like meteors ; all so illuminating night,  
That the succeeding sun hid pale in cloud,  
And wept with envy, till he dawn'd at length  
Upon the famous Amphitheatre,  
Which, in its masonry out-doing all  
That Rome of a like kind in ruin shows,  
This day out-did itself,  
In number, rank, and glory of spectators,  
Magnificence of retinue, multitude,  
Size, beauty, and courage, of the noble beasts  
Who came to dye its yellow dust with blood ;  
As each horn'd hero of the cloven hoof,  
Broad-chested, and thick-neckt, and wrinkle-brow'd,  
Rush'd roaring in, and tore the ground with 's foot,  
As saying, " Lo ! this grave is yours or mine ! "  
While that yet nobler beast, noblest of all,  
Who knights the very knighthood that he carries,  
Proud in submission to a nobler will,

Spurn'd all his threats, and, touch'd by the light spur,  
 His rider glittering like a god aloft,  
 Turn'd onset into death. Fight follow'd fight,  
 Till darkness came at last, sending Madrid  
 Already surfeited with joy, to dream  
 Of greater, not unanxious that the crown  
 And centre of the centre of the world  
 Should not fall short of less renowned cities  
 In splendour of so great a celebration ;  
 While too the hundreds of a hundred nations,  
 In wonder or in envy cramm'd her streets ;  
 Until her darling come at last, whose spouse  
 Shall lay his own two empires at her feet,  
 And crown her thrice ; as Niece, and Spouse, and Queen.

*Juan.* A charming story, finisht just in time,  
 For look ! (*They look out.*)

*Fel.* That is the father, Don Alonso.

*Juan.* Indeed !

*Ped. (aside).* That's he then ! But that strange  
 man with him,  
 Who's he ?

*Hern.* Oh, I can tell you that ;  
 His nephew, an Asturian gentleman,  
 Betroth'd to one of the daughters.

*Juan (aside).*

Not to mine !

444 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT II

*Ped. (aside).* Not my Eugenia, or by Heav'n—  
But we shall scarcely see them, Felix, here,  
Wrapt in their mantles too.

*Fel.* And I would pay  
My compliment to Don Alonso.

*Juan.* Come,  
Let us go down with you into the street.  
(*Aside.*) Oh love, that in her memory survive  
One thought of me, not dead if scarce alive !

*Ped. (aside).* Oh, may her bosom whisper her 'tis  
still  
Her eyes that draw me after where they will !  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Street between the Houses of ALONSO and  
FELIX : ALONSO and TORRIBIO waiting.*

*Alon.* If you really affect Eugenia, nephew,—  
(*aside*) as I wished,—I will communicate with her  
after church, and if all be well (as I cannot doubt)  
get a dispensation forthwith. But they are coming.

*Enter from ALONSO'S door CLARA, EUGENIA in mantles,  
the latter with a handkerchief in her hand ; MARI  
NUÑO, BRIGIDA, and OTAÑEZ behind ; and at the  
same time FELIX, JUAN, and PEDRO opposite.*

*Clara.* Cover your face, Eugenia. People in the street.

*Eug.* Well, I'm not ashamed of it. (*Aside.*) Don Pedro ! and Don Juan !

*Fel. (whispers).* Which is it, Don Juan ?

*Juan.* She with the handkerchief in her hand. I'll go wait for her at the church. [*Exit.*

*Ped. (to JUAN).* That is she with the white kerchief in her hand. I'll follow them.

*Fel. (aside).* The same, then !

• *Clara.* Eugenia, lend me your handkerchief, it is hot. (*Takes the handkerchief and uncovers her face towards FELIX.*) And let us go, and do not you look behind you.

*Fel.* And she I most admired.

[*Exeunt CLARA, EUGENIA, &c., PEDRO after them.*

*Torr.* Uncle, what are these fellows hanging about our doors for ?

*Alon.* Nay, 'tis the public street, you know.

*Torr.* What, my cousins' street ?

*Alon.* To be sure.

*Torr.* I'll not suffer any one I don't like to hang about it, however, and least of all these perfumery puppies.

*Alon.* But if they happen to live here, nephew ?

*Torr.* Don't let 'em live here, then.

*Alon.* But if they own houses ?

*Torr.* They mustn't own houses, then.

*Fel.* Don Alonso, permit me to kiss your hand on your arrival among us. I ought indeed first to have waited upon you in your own house ; but this happy chance makes me anticipate etiquette.

*Torr.* Coxcomb !

*Alon.* Thank you, sir ; had I known you intended me such a favour, I should have anticipated your anticipation by waiting upon you. Give me leave to present to you my nephew, Don Torribio de Cuadrillos, who will also be proud of your acquaintance.

*Torr.* No such thing, I shan't at all.

*Alon.* Nephew, nephew !

*Fel.* I trust you are well, sir ?

*Torr.* Oh, so, so, thank ye, for the matter of that, neither well nor ill, but mixt-like. (*ALONSO salutes FELIX and exits with TORRIBIO.*)

*Fel.* Now then, I know both face, and dress, and name,

And that my rival friends both love the same ;  
The same too that myself of the fair pair  
Thought yester-eve the fairest of the fair :  
Was 't not enough for my two friends that they

Turn enemies—must I too join the fray ?  
 Oh, how at once to reconcile all three,  
 Those two with one another, and with me !

*Re-enter JUAN hastily.*

*Juan.* On seeing me, my friend, her colour chang'd :  
 She loves me still, Don Felix ! I am sure  
 She loves me ! Is not the face—we know it is,  
 The tell-tale index of the heart within ?  
 Oh happiness ! at once within your house,  
 And next my lady's ! What is now to do  
 But catch the ball good fortune throws at us !  
 You know her father, you will visit him  
 Of course, and then—and then—what easier ?  
 Draw me in with you, or after you—or perhaps  
 A letter first—ay, and then afterward—  
 But why so dumb ?

*Fel.* I scarce know how to answer.  
*Juan,* you know I am too much your friend  
 To do you any spite ?

*Juan.* How could I dream it ?

*Enter PEDRO hastily.*

*Ped.* Oh, Felix, if my love—

*Fel. (aside).* The other now !

He must be stopt. A moment, gentlemen,  
 Before you speak, and let me tell you first  
 A case of conscience you must solve for me.  
 You both have mighty matters, I doubt not,  
 To tell me, such as warm young gentlemen  
 Are never at a loss for in Madrid ;  
 But I may have my difficulties too.

(*Aside.*) The same will serve for both.

*Ped.* Well, let us hear.

*Fel.* Suppose some friend of yours, dear as you will,  
 Loving your neighbour's daughter—(such a case  
 Will do as well as any)—ask'd of you  
 To smuggle him, his letters, or himself,  
 Into that neighbour's house, there secretly  
 To ply a stolen love ; what would you do ?

*Ped.* Do it of course !

*Juan.* Why not ?

*Fel.* Well, I would not.

*Ped.* But why ?

*Fel.* Because, however it turn'd out,  
 I must do ill ; if one friend's love succeeded  
 I had play'd traitor to the other still ;  
 If unsuccessful, not that cost alone,  
 But also, without counter-profiting,  
 Him whom I sacrific'd so much to serve.

*Ped.* If that be your determination,  
I have no more to say. [Exit.

*Juan.* Nor I : farcwell ;  
I must find other means. [Exit.

*Fel.* Of all the plagues,  
For one with no love profit of his own  
Thus to be pester'd with two lovers' pains !  
And yet, what, after all, between the two—  
Between the *three*, perhaps, am I to do ?  
Fore Heav'n, I think 'twill be the only way  
To get her to untie who drew the knot ;  
No woman ever at a loss  
To mend or mar a matter as she wills.  
Yet 'tis an awkward thing to ask a lady,  
“ Pray, madam, which of these two sighing swains  
“ Do you like best ? or both ? or neither, madam ? ”  
Were not a letter best ? But then who take it ?  
Since to commit her letter, would so far  
Commit her honour to another's hands ?  
By Heav'n, I think I've nothing left to do,  
But ev'n to write it, and to take it too ;  
A ticklish business—but may fair intent  
And prudent conduct lead to good event [Exit.



SCENE III. *An Apartment in DON ALONSO's House.*—

*Enter CLARA, EUGENIA, MARI NUÑO, &c.*

*Clara.* Here, take my mantle, Mari. Oh, I wish we had a chaplain of our own in the house, not to go abroad through the crowded streets !

*Eug.* And I, that church were a league of crowded street off, and we obliged to go to it daily.

*Mari.* I agree with Señora Clara.

*Brigida.* And I with Señora Eugenia.

*Mari.* And why, pray ?

*Brig.* Oh, madam, I know who it is deals most in sheep's eyes.

*Enter DON ALONSO.*

*Alon. (talking to himself as he enters).* How lucky he should have pitcht on the very one I wanted !  
(*Aloud.*) Oh, Eugenia, I would speak with you. Nay, retire not, Clara, for I want you to pardon me or the very thing Eugenia is to thank me for.

*Clara.* A riddle, sir. I pardon you ?

*Alon.* Listen, both of you. Your cousin Don Torribio has declared his love for Eugenia : and though I could have wish'd to marry you, Clara, first, and to the head of our house too, yet my regret at

your missing it is almost cancell'd by the joy of your sister's acceptance.

*Clara.* And so with me, believe me, sir. I am well content to be slighted so long as she is happy : which may she be with my cousin these thousand years to come. (*Aside.*) Oh, providential rejection !  
[*Exit.*

*Torribio (peeping in).* Ah ! what a wry face she makes !

*Alon.* And you, Eugenia, what say you ?

*Eug. (aside).* Alas ! surprise on surprise ! (*Aloud.*) Nay, sir, you know, I hope, that I am ever ready to obey you.

*Alon.* I look'd for nothing else of you.

*Torr.* Nor I. •

*Alon.* Your cousin is waiting your answer in his chamber. I will tell him the good news, and bring him to you.  
[*Exit.*

*Eug.* Only let him come ! Alas !

*Torr. (entering).* How lightly steps a favour'd lover forth ! Give you joy, cousin.

*Eug.* The wretch !

*Torr.* Being selected by the head of your house.

*Eug.* Sir, one word, I wouldn't marry you if it should cost me my life.

*Torr.* Ah, you are witty, cousin, I know.

*Eug.* Not to you, sir. And now especially, I mean to tell you sober truth, and abide by it, so you had better listen. I tell you once again, and once for all, I wouldn't marry you to save my life !

*Torr.* Cousin ! After what I heard you tell your father ?

*Eug.* What I said then was out of duty to him ; and what I now say is out of detestation of you.

*Torr.* I'll go and tell him this, I declare I will.

*Eug.* Do, and I'll deny it. But I mean it all 'the same, and swear it.

*Torr.* Woman, am I not your cousin ?

*Eug.* Yes.

*Torr.* And head of the family ?

*Eug.* I dare say.

*Torr.* An Hildago ?

*Eug.* Yes.

*Torr.* Young ?

*Eug.* Yes.

*Torr.* Gallant ?

*Eug.* Very.

*Torr.* And dispos'd to you ?

*Eug.* Very possibly.

*Torr.* What do you mean then ?

*Eug.* Whatever you choose, so long as you believe I mean what I say. I'll never marry you. You might be all you say, and fifty other things beside, but I'll never marry any man without a capacity.

*Torr.* Capacity ! without a Capacity ! I who have the family estate, and my ancestors painted in a row on the patent in my saddle-bags ! I who —

*Enter ALONSO.*

*Alon.* Well, nephew, here you are at last ; I've been hunting every where to tell you the good news.

*Torr.* And what may that be, pray ?

*Alon.* That your cousin Eugenia cordially accepts your offer, and—

*Torr.* Oh, indeed, does she so ? I tell you she's a very odd way of doing it then. Oh, uncle, she has said that to me I wouldn't say to my gelding.

*Alon.* To you ?

*Torr.* Ay, to me—here—on this very spot—just now.

*Alon.* But what ?

*Torr.* What ? why, that I had no Capacity ! But I'll soon settle that ; I either have a Capacity or not—if I have, she lies ; if not, I desire you to buy me one directly, whatever it may cost.

*Alon.* What infatuation !

*Torr.* What, it costs so much, does it ? I don't care, I'll not have it thrown in my teeth by her or any woman ; and if you won't, I'll go and buy a Capacity, and bring it back with me, let it cost—ay, and weigh—what it will. [Exit.

*Alon.* Nephew, nephew ! Stop him there !

*Enter CLARA and EUGENIA.*

*Clara.* What is the matter, sir ?

*Alon.* Oh, graceless girl, what have you been saying to your cousin ?

*Eug.* I, sir ? Nothing.

*Alon.* Oh ! if you deceive me ! But I must first stop his running after a Capacity ! [Exit.

*Eug.* What can I have done ?

*Clara.* Nay, attempt not dissimulation with me, who know how you would risk even your advancement for a sarcasm.

*Eug.* It was all for your sake, if I did, Clara.

*Clara.* For my sake ! oh, indeed, you think I can have no lovers but what you reject ? Poor little fool ! I could have enough if I chose to lay out for them as some do ; but many will pluck at an apple who will retire from a fortress.

*Eug.* Hark ! they are coming back ; I dare not face them both as yet. [*Exit.*

*Enter DON FELIX.*

*Fel.* Permit me, madam—

*Clara.* Who is this ?

*Fel.* One,  
madam,

Who dares to ask one word with you.

• *Clara.* With me ?

*Fel.* Indeed with you.

*Clara.* You cannot, sir, mean me.

*Fel.* Once more, and once for all, with you indeed ;

Let me presume to say so, knowing well

I say so in respect, not in presumption.

*Eug. (peeping).* Why, whom has my staid sister got with her ?

*Clara.* With me ! My very silence and surprise  
Bid you retire at once.

*Fel.* Which I will do  
When you will let this silence speak to you  
With less offence perhaps than could my tongue.

*(Offering her a letter.)*

456 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT II

*Eug.* Oh, if he would but try if fort or apple !

*Clara.* A letter too !—for me !

*Fel.* And, madam, one

It most imports your honour you should read.

For, that being once in question, I make light

That my friends' lives, Don Juan and Don Pedro,

Are in the balance too.

*Eug.* Don Juan ! Don Pedro !

*Clara.* What, sir, is this to me, who neither know  
Don Juan, nor Don Pedro, nor yourself ?

*Fel.* Having then done my duty to my friends, ' And (once again I say 't) to yourself, madam, Albeit in vain—I'll not offend you more

By my vain presence. (Going.)

*Clara.* Nay, a moment—wait.

I must clear up this mystery. Indeed,

I would not be discourteous or ungrateful :

But ere I thank you for your courtesy,

Know you to whom you do it ?

*Fel.* To Donna Eugenia.

*Clara.* Well, sir ?

*Eug.* Oh, the hypocrite !

*Fel.* You are  
the lady ?

*Clara.* Enough—give me the letter, and adieu.

SCENE III] BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER 457

*Eug.* I can forbear no longer. (*Coming out.*)

Sister, stop !

Oh ! what to do !—the letter—

*Clara.*

Well ?

*Eug.*

I tell you

My father and my cousin are coming up,

And if they see—

*Clara.*

Well, if they see ? what then !

I wish them both to see and hear it all.

(*Calling.*) Sir ! Father ! Cousin ! Otañez !

*\*Alon. (within).*

Clara's

voice ?

*Fel.* What to do now ?

*Eug.*

Alas, to tell the truth,

When I but wish'd to lie !

*Clara (calling).*

This way, sir, here !

*Eug.* Will you expose us both ? In here ! in here !

[*She hides FELIX behind arras.*]

*Enter ALONSO, TORRIBIO, MARI NUÑO, OTAÑEZ, &c.*

*Alon.* What is the matter ?

*Clara.* There is some one in the house, sir. A man—I saw him stealing along the corridor, towards the garret.

*Brigida.* It must be a robber.



*Alon.* A robber ?

*Mari.* What more likely in a rich Indian's house ?

*Alon.* I'll search the house.

*Torr.* I'll lead the forlorn hope, though that garret were Maestricht itself. Now, cousin, you shall see if I've a Capacity or not.

[*Exeunt ALONSO and the men.*]

*Clara.* Do you two watch in the passage.  
(*Exeunt MARI NUÑO and BRIGIDA.*) And now, sir, the door is open, give me the letter and begone.

*Fel.* Adieu, madam, neglect not its advice.

*Eug.* Alas, alas, she has it !

*Fel.* She's all too fair ! come, honour, come, and shame

False love from poaching upon friendship's game !

[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter ALONSO, &c.*

*Alon.* We can see nothing of him, daughter.

*Clara.* Nay, sir, he probably made off when the alarm was given. Take no more trouble.

*Alon.* Nay, we'll search the whole house.

*Torr.* What do you say to my Capacity now, cousin ?  
[*Exeunt ALONSO, TERRIBIO, &c.*]

*Clara.* You see, Eugenia, in what your enterprises

end. At the first crack, you faint and surrender. I have done all this to show you the difference between talking and doing. And now go ; I have got the letter, and want to read it.

*Eug.* And so do I ! but—

*Clara.* Go ! I am mistress now. (*Exit EUGENIA.*)  
 May they not have written to me under cover of her name ? let me see. (*Reads.*) “ Let not him offend honour by the very means he takes to secure it ; at least let his good intention excuse his ill seeming. Don Juan, more than ever enamoured of you, hangs about your doors ; Don Pedro follows every step you take ; they are both in my house ; it is impossible but the secret must soon escape both, who must then refer their rivalry to the sword, and all to the scandal of your name. You can, by simply disowning both, secure their lives, your own reputation, and my peace of mind as their friend and host. Adieu ! ”  
 Oh what perplexing thoughts this little letter  
 Buzzes about my brain, both what it says,  
 And leaves unsaid !—oh, can it be for me ?  
 And is the quiet nun really belov'd  
 Under the cover of an idle flirt ?  
 Or is it but for her—the vain, pert thing,  
 Who thinks her eye slays all it looks upon ?

460 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT II

If it be so, and she, not I, is lov'd,

I yet may be reveng'd—

*Eug. (entering).* On whom ?

*Clara.* Eugenia !

This letter that has fallen to my hands,

But meant for you—

*Eug.* Oh, I know all about it.

*Clara.* Know all about it ! know then that two  
men

Are even now following your steps like dogs

To tear your reputation between them,

And then each other for that worthless sake,

And yet—

*Eug.* A moment, you shall see at once

How easily I shall secure myself,

And them, and supersede your kind intentions.

Signor Don Pedro ! *(Calls at the window.)*

*Clara.* What are you about ?

*Eug.* Listen and you will hear.

*Clara.* You dare not do it !

*Eug.* My father's safely lockt up in his room,

(Thanks to the gout your false alarm has brought,)

My cousin gone to buy capacities,

And now's my time. *(Calling at the window.)*

Don Pedro ! Signor Don Pedro !

*Ped. (coming below to the window).*

He well may wait to have his name thrice call'd  
When such a goddess—

*Eug.* Listen, sir, to me.

It is because, I say, *because* this room,  
Away from father's and duenna's ears,  
Allows some harmless speech, it also bars  
All nearer access than the ears and eyes  
Of father or duenna both could do.  
But, seeing harm of harmless trifling come,  
I now entreat, implore, command you, sir,  
To leave this window and my threshold clear,  
Now and for ever !

*Ped.* Hear me—

*Eug.* Pardon me,

I cannot.

*Ped.* But this once—

*Eug.* If you persist

I must be rude.

*Ped.* Oh, how do worse than—

*Eug. (shutting the blinds down).* Thus !

*Clara.* And to your other gallant ?

*Eug.* Why not think

If he were here, I'd do the same to him ?

Oh, Clara, be assur'd my levities

462 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

Are but the dust on youth's butterfly wing,  
Though prudes and sinners too take fright at them ;  
Like that benighted traveller, you know,  
Who, frightened by a shallow brook that jump'd  
And bubbled at his right, swerv'd to the left  
And tumbled into one that lay quite still,  
But deep enough to drown him for his pains. [*Exit.*

*Clara.* What, did she hear what to myself I said ?  
Or saw my colour change from white to red ?  
Or only guess'd me waiting for the prey  
Her idle chatter ought to fright away ?  
If chance have done more than all prudence could,  
Prudence at least may make occasion good.  
And if these lovers by mistake should woo,  
Why (by mistake) should I not listen too ?  
And teach the teacher, to her proper cost,  
Those waters are least deep that prattle most.

---

ACT III.

SCENE I. *Room in ALONSO's House.* CLARA and MARI  
NUÑO.

*Clara.* It is so, indeed.

*Mari.* You know you can always rely on my old

love to you. But indeed I cannot but wonder at your sister's forwardness.

*Clara.* Yes ; to think of two cavaliers after her at once ! I look upon it as my duty to set all to right ; to do this I must once more speak to him who warned me of it ; and I want you to give him this letter—in *her* name, remember—this will bring him here to-night, and I shall undeceive him for ever. But hark ! some one—

*TORRIBIO is about to enter.*

*Mari.* 'Tis that wretch. Stay, sir, no man comes in here.

*Torr.* Away, troublesome duenna.

*Mari.* It's not decent, I tell you.

*Torr.* An't my cousin decent ; and an't I ?

*Clara.* What is the matter ?

*Torr.* This old woman won't let me come in.

*Clara.* She is right, unless my father be with you.

*Torr.* Oh, I understand—

Those that are out

Still will pout.

*Clara.* Well, since she who is in, and may grin, is not here, you have no business neither. For me,

464 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

what grudge I have against you, be assur'd I can and will repay. Mari, remember. *[Exit.*

*Mari.* Hark ! some one at the door. *[Exit.*

*Torr.* By heav'n and earth, I do begin suspect !  
I say again I do begin suspect !—  
And valour rises with suspicion—  
I shall ere long be very terrible.

Ancestors ! Head of house ! Capacity !  
For passing through the house—let me not say it,  
'Till I have told my tongue it lies to say it—

In passing through the passage, what saw I  
Within Eugenia's room, behind her bed !

I saw— *(Re-enter MARI NUÑO with a letter.)*

*Mari.* A letter, madam,—Where is she ?

*Torr.* Woman, she was, but is not. A letter too ?  
Give it me.

*Mari.* You too !

*Torr.* Give it me, or dread  
My dreadful vengeance on your wither'd head.

*Mari.* Leave hold of it.—

*Torr.* I'll not ! The more you pull,  
The more—

*Mari.* Then take that on your empty skull !  
*(Deals him a blow, and calls.)*

Help ! Help !

*Torr.* You crying, when two teeth are out—

*Mari.* “As swelling prologues of” — Help !  
murder ! murder !

*Enter* EUGENIA, CLARA, ALONSO, BRIGIDA, &c.

*Alon.* What is the matter now ?

*Mari.* Don Torribio, sir, because I wouldn’t let him have my young lady’s letter, has laid violent hands on me.

*Torr.* I ?

*All.* Don Torribio !

*Torr.* I tell you—

*Alon.* Indeed, nephew, your cholerick jealousy carries you too far. A respectable female in my house !

*Torr.* I tell you, that it is *me* who—

*Alon.* I know—enough—make not the matter worse by worse excuses. Give me the letter has been the cause of such unseemly conduct.

*Eug. (aside).* If it should be from one of them !

*Clara (aside to EUGENIA).* Nothing I hope from your gallants.

*Alon. (reads).* “My dear nieces, this being the day of the Queen’s public entry, I have engag’d a balcony, and will send my coach for you directly to come and see it with me.” This, you see, nephew,



466 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

is all your suspicions amount to ! My cousin, Donna Violante, inviting my daughters to witness this august ceremony ! If you still suspect ; here, take it, and read it for yourself.

*Torr. (after looking at the letter).* I tell you what, uncle, if they wait till I've read it, they'll not see the sight at all.

*Alon.* Why so ?

*Torr.* Because I can't read.

*Alon.* That this should be !

*Torr.* But that's no matter neither. They can teach me before they go.

*Alon.* What, when it's to-day ? almost directly ?

*Torr.* Can't it be put off ?

*Alon.* 'Tis useless saying more. Daughters, such a ceremony happens, perhaps, but once in a life ; you must see it. On with your mantles, whether Don Torribio approve or not. I am lame, you see, and must keep at home ; to hear about it all from you on your return.

*Clara.* At your pleasure, sir.

*Eug.* Shall I stay with you, sir, while Clara—

*Alon.* No, no. Both of you go.

*Clara (aside to MARI, while putting on her mantle).*  
Remember the letter !

*Mari.* Trust to me.

*Eug. (aside).* I wonder if they will be there !

[*Excunt all but TORRIBIO.*

*Torr.* Whether the Queen enter to-day,  
To-morrow, or keep quite away,  
Let those go see who have a mind ;  
I am resolved to stay behind ;  
And now all gone, and coast quite clear,  
Clear up the secret I suspect and fear. [Exit.

SCENE II. *A Room in FELIX's House.*—FELIX and  
HERNANDO.

*Hern.* Not going to see the Entry, sir ?

*Fel.* What use going to a festival if one has no spirits for it ?

*Hern.* Humph, what makes you out of spirits ?

*Fel.* Why should you ask ?

*Hern.* Nay, then, you have already answer'd me.  
You are in love.

*Fel.* I scarce know whether you are right or wrong,  
Hernando. I have indeed seen a lady whose very  
beauty forbids all hope of my attaining it.

*Hern.* How so, sir ?

*Fel.* She who has enslav'd Don Juan and Don Pedro

468 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

has fetter'd me at last ! I should care little for their rivalry, had not each made me keeper of his love, so that—Hark !

*Mari Nuño (within).* Don Felix !

*Fel.* Who is that ?

*Hern.* Some one calling you.

*Mari (within).* Señor Don Felix !

*Fel.* Well ?

*Mari (within).* From Donna Eugenia !

*[A letter is thrown in at the window.]*

*Fel.* From Eugenia ! *(Reads.)* “Grateful to you for your advice, I have already begun to follow it ; but, in order to that, I must see you once again, this evening ! Adieu !” Here is a dilemma ! For if—

*Hern.* Don Juan !

*Enter* JUAN.

*Juan (aside).* What was that ?

*Fel.* Don Juan back,

When such a festival—

*Juan.* And you ? Oh, Felix,

I know not how to speak or hold my tongue !

*Fel.* A riddle ! How is that ?

*Juan.* Why, if I speak

I needs must anger you ; if not, myself.

*Fel.* I do not understand it yet.

*Juan.* Nor I ;  
Yet if you give me leave (as leave they give  
To children and to fools to say their mind)  
I'll say mine.

*Fel.* Surely say it.

*Juan.* Tell me then—  
That letter I saw flying in at the window  
As I came up, what was it ?

*Fel.* That of all  
That you could ask, Juan, I cannot answer—  
Must not—relying on our old regard  
For fair construction.

*Juan.* I believe it, Felix :  
Yet seeing that you first excus'd yourself  
From helping on my suit, upon the score  
Of other obligation ; and that now,  
Ev'n now, but a few wretched minutes back,  
Eugenia herself, in the public street,  
Forbad me from her carriage angrily  
From following her more—What can I think  
But that she loves another ? when besides,  
Coming back suddenly, I hear her name  
Whisper'd—oh what so loud as an ill whisper !—  
By you, and see a letter too thrown in,

470 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

Which on my coming up confus'd you hide,  
And will not say from whom—I say, Don Felix,  
What can I think ?

*Fel. (aside).* And I, what can I do ?  
Who, even if I may excuse myself,  
Must needs embroil Don Pedro !

*Juan.* Answer me.

*Fel.* Have I not answered you sufficiently,  
In saying that my old and well-tried love  
Should well excuse my silence ?

*Juan.* I confess  
Your love, old, and well tried as you profess ;  
And on that very score ask of you, Felix,  
What you would do if one as true and tried  
In a like case seal'd up his lips to you ?

*Fel.* Leave them unlockt in fullest confidence.

*Juan.* Alas ! how much, much easier to give  
Than follow ev'n the counsel one implores !  
Felix, in pity I entreat of you,  
Show me that letter !

*Fel.* Gladly should you see it  
If no one but myself were implicate.

*Juan.* There *is* then some one else ?

*Fel.* There is.

*Juan.* Who else ?

*Fel.* That's what I cannot tell you.

*Juan.* Dare not trust  
A friend as true to you as you to him ?

*Fel.* In anything but this.

*Juan.* What can this do  
But aggravate my worst suspicions ?

*Fel.* I cannot help it.

*Juan.* I must tell you then  
My friendship for you, Felix, may defer,  
But not forego, the reading of that letter.

\* *Fel.* I am sorry, sir, your friendship must abide  
In ignorance till doomsday.

*Juan.* You'll not show it ?

*Fel.* No, never.

*Juan.* Follow me, sir.

*Fel.* Where you please.

*As they are going out, enter PEDRO.*

*Ped.* How now ? Don Juan and Felix quarrelling ?

*Fel.* Nay, only walking out.

*Ped.* What, walking out,  
With hands upon your swords and inflam'd faces ?  
You shall not go.

*Hern.* That's right, sir, keep them back,  
They were about—

472 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

*Fel.* Peace, rascal !

*Ped.* Friends may quarrel,

But surely not to such extremity

But that a third may piece the quarrel up

Without the sword. The cause of your dispute ?

*Fel.* I must be silent.

*Juan.* And so must not I ;

Who will not have it thought

That I forgot my manners as a guest

For any idle reason. You, Don Pedro, ‘

Though lately known to me, are a gentleman,

And you shall hear my story.

*Fel.* Not a word,

Or else—

*Ped.* Nay, Felix—

*Juan.* I will speak it out !

Don Pedro, I confided to Don Felix,

My friend and host, the love I long have borne

For one with whom he could advance my suit,

And promis’d so to do it ; but instead,

Yea, under the very mask of doing it,

Has urg’d his own ; has even now receiv’d

A letter through that ready window thrown,

He dares not show me ; and to make all sure,

I heard him whispering as I came upstairs,

The very name of my Eugenia—

*Ped.*

Hold !

This is my quarrel.

He who pretends to love Eugenia

Must answer it to me.

*Juan.*

Two rivals, then !

*Fel.* Two enemies grown out of two old friends  
By the very means I us'd to keep them so !

*Juan.* Keep them, indeed !

*Ped.*

When with base treachery—

• *Juan.* Hypocrisy—

*Ped.*

Under the name of friend—

*Juan.* A pretty friend—

*Ped.*

You robb'd me—

*Juan (turning to PEDRO).* You ! Dare you  
Pretend—

*Ped. (to JUAN).* Dare I ! Dare you, sir ?

*Fel.*

Peace, I say,

And hear me speak !

*Juan (to FELIX).* The time is past for that.  
Follow me, sir.

*Ped.*

No, *me*.

*Fel.* One, or the other, or together both,  
I'll either lead or follow, nothing loath !

[*Exeunt wrangling.*]



SCENE III. ALONSO *sitting*.—*Enter* TORRIBIO.

*Torr.* Oh, uncle !

*Alon.* Well, what now ?

*Torr.* Oh, such a thing ! I suspected it !

*Alon.* Well, tell me.

*Torr.* Such a thing !

*Alon.* Speak, man.

*Torr.* When we were searching the house for the man cousin Clara told us of—

*Alon.* Well ?

*Torr.* Passing by cousin Eugenia's room, I saw—  
I have not breath to say it !

*Alon.* Speak, sir.

*Torr.* Those men in the house—those dandies about the door—I know how they get in now—when I found in my cousin's room—behind her very bed—

*Alon.* Don Torribio !

*Torr.* The very ladder they climb up by !

*Alon.* A ladder ?

*Torr.* Ah, and a very strong one too, all of iron and cord.

*Alon.* If this were true—

*Torr.* Wait till I show it you, then. [Exit.

*Alon.* Not in vain did Mari Nuño warn me of her dangerous disposition ! If he have such a proof of her incontinence how will he marry her ?

*Re-enter TORRIBIO with a fardingale.*

*Torr.* There, uncle, there it is, hoops, and steps, and all !

*Alon.* This a ladder ?

*Torr.* Ah, that, if it were all let out, would scale the tower of Babel, I believe.

*Alon.* I can scarce control my rage. Fool ! this is a fardingale, not a ladder.

*Torr.* A what-ingale ?

*Alon.* A fardingale, fool ! <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "A hoop of whalebone, used to spread out the petticoat to a wide circumference ;"—Johnson ; who one almost wonders did not spread out into a wider circumference of definition about the "*poore verdingales*," that (according to Heywood)

—————"must lie in the streete,  
To have them no doore in the citye made meete."

The Spanish name is "*guarda infanta*," which puzzles Don Torribio, as to what his cousin had to do with infants. Our word was first (as Heywood writes) *verdingale* : which as Johnson tells us, "much exercised the etymology of Skin'ner, who at last seems to determine that it is derived from *vertu garde*." This, however, Johnson thinks does not at all get to the bottom of the etymology, which may, he says, be found in Dutch. Perhaps the old French *petenlair* was of the same kindred.

476 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

*Torr.* Why, that's worse than the ladder !

*Alon.* You will fairly drive me out of my senses !  
Go, sir, directly, and put it back where you took it  
from, and for Heaven's sake, no more of such folly !

[*Exit.*

*Torr.* Well—to think of this ! and my cousin that  
look'd so nice too !

*Voices (within).* Coach there ! coach !

*Enter MARI NUÑO.*

*Mari.* They are come back. I must get lights.  
Who's this ?

*Torr.* Nobody.

*Mari.* What are you doing with that fardingle ;  
and where did you get it ?

*Torr.* Nothing, and nowhere. °

*Mari.* Come, give it me at once, lest I give you  
the fellow of the cuff I gave you before.

*Torr.* For fear of which, take that upon your  
wrinkled chaps. (*Strikes her, and calls out.*) Help !  
help ! Murder ! murder ! Help !

*Enter ALONSO, CLARA, EUGENIA, &c., in mantles.*

*Alon.* What now ?

*Torr.* Mari Nuño there, only because I wish'd her  
good night, laid violent hands on me.

*Mari.* Oh the wretch ! he wanted to make love to me—and worse—declaring he would none of any who used such a thing as this. (*Showing fardingale.*)

*Alon.* Let us hear no more of such folly. There is something else to-day to tell of. Well, (*to his daughters,*) you have seen this procession ?

*Eug.* Ay, sir ; the greatest sight, I believe, that Spain has seen since she was greatest of nations.

*Alon.* I, who could not go myself, am to see it, you know, in your recital.

• *Eug.* As best we can, sir.

*Clara* (*aside to MARI NUÑO*). Have you seen Don Felix ?

*Mari* (*aside*). Enough, he will be here. But when ?

*Clara.* When the story is done, and all weary are gone to bed.

*Mari.* Good. [*Exit ; the rest sit down.*]

*Clara.* Begin you then, Eugenia, I will chime in.

*Eug.* This being the long-expected day  
When our fair Spain and fairest Mariana  
Should quicken longing hope to perfect joy,  
Madrid awoke, and dress'd her squares and streets  
In all their glory ; through all which we pass'd

478 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

Up to the Prado, where the city's self,  
In white and pearl array'd, by ancient usage,  
Waited in person to receive the bride  
By a triumphal arch that rose heaven-high,  
The first of four all nam'd and hung about  
With emblems of the four parts of the world,  
(Each with a separate element distinct,)  
Of which our sovereign lord was now to lay  
The four crowns at his sovereign lady's feet.

*Clara.* And this first arch was Europe ; typified  
By the wide Air, which temperatest she breathes,  
And which again, for double cognizance,  
Wore the imperial eagle for its crest ;  
With many another airy symbol more,  
And living statues supplementary  
Of Leon and Castile, each with its crown,  
Austria, the cradle of the royal bride,  
And Rome, the mistress of the faith of all.

*Eug.* Here then, when done the customary rite  
Of kissing hands and due obeisance,  
Drum, trumpet, and artillery thundering,  
With that yet lordliest salute of all,  
A people's universal acclamation ;  
(And never in the world were subjects yet  
So proud, and bow'd, and with so good a cause ;)

Under a golden canopy she mov'd  
 Tow'rd San Geronimo, whose second arch,  
 Of no less altitude and magnificence,  
 Deck't with the sixty crowns of Asia,  
 Receiv'd her next, wearing for cognizance  
 Earth, of which Asia is the largest piece ;  
 Which Earth again carried a lion's mane,  
 As proclamation of her noblest growth.

*Clara.* Thence passing on, came to where Africa  
 Her waste of arid desert emblem  
 By Fire, whose incarnation, the Sun,  
 Burn'd on this arch as in his house in heaven,  
 Bore record of the trophies two great Queens  
 Upon the torrid continent had won,  
 Who, one with holy policy at home,  
 The other in Granada by the sword,  
 Extirpated deadly Mahometism.

*Eug.* Last, to the Holy Virgin dedicate,  
 From whose cathedral by the holy choir  
 Chaunted Te Deum, rose in splendid arch  
 America, wearing for her device  
 The silver image of the Ocean,  
 That roll'd the holy cross to the New World.  
 And so all pass'd to the Escorial,  
 In front of which, in two triumphal cars,

480 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

Two living statues were—one Mercury,  
 Who, as divine ambassador, thus far  
 Had brought the royal bride propitiously ;  
 The other, Hymen, who took up the charge  
 Mercury left, and with unquenching torch,  
 While cannon, trumpet, choir, and people's voice  
 Thunder'd her praises, took the palfrey's rein,  
 Who gloried in the beauty that he bore,  
 And brought and left her at her palace door.

*Alon.* Well done, well done, both of you, in  
 whose lively antiphony I have seen it all as well as if  
 I had been there.

*Torr.* Well, for my part I neither wanted to see it  
 nor hear of it.

*Alon.* No ? why so, nephew ?

*Torr.* Lord, I've seen twice as good as that  
 down in my country many a time, all the boys  
 and girls dancing, and the mayor, and the priest,  
 and—

*Alon.* Peace, peace. Come, Brigida, light me to  
 my room, I am sleepy.

*Eug.* And I ; with sight-seeing, and sight-telling,  
 I suppose. (*Aside.*) And with a heavy heart, alas !

[*Exeunt ALONSO, EUGENIA, and BRIGIDA.*

*Clara.* Will not you to bed too, sir ?

*Torr.* Not till I've had my supper, I promise you. Oh, I don't care for all your sour looks, not I, nor your threats of revenge neither.

*Clara.* You don't ?

*Torr.* No, I defy you.

*Clara.* Not if I were to prove to you that she you slighted me for loves another ?

*Torr.* Oh, cousin Clara !

*Clara.* Shall I prove it to you ?

*Torr.* Oh, if my ancestors could hear this, what would they say ?

*Clara.* I don't know. But you may hear if you like what she says to your rival.

*Torr.* Ha !

*Clara.* Go into this balcony, and you will hear her talking to him in the street.

*Torr.* I knew ! I guessed ! the ladder !

*(He goes into the balcony and she shuts him in).*

*Clara.* There cool yourself in the night till I let you out. And now to have *you* safe too. *(Locks EUGENIA's door).* And now, all safe, for the first time in my life Love and I meet in fair field. Mari Nuño ! *(Enter MARI.)* Where is the Cavalier ?

*Mari.* Waiting in my chamber.



482 BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER [ACT III

*Clara.* Bring him. You understand it is all for Eugenia's good ?

*Mari.* I understand.

*[Exit, and returns with FELIX.*

*Fel.* I fly, madam, to your feet. *(Kneels).*

*Clara.* Rise, sir, 'tis about your letter I sent to you.

*Fel.* Alas, madam, all is worse than ever !

*Clara.* What has happened ?

*Fel.* Not only did my two friends fall out with each other, as I expected, but with me for the very good services I was doing them ; insulted me till I could withhold my sword no longer ; we went out to fight ; were seen, pursued, and disperst by the alguazils. I return'd home to await them, but as yet know nothing more of them.

*Clara.* Alas, sir, what do I not owe you for your care on my behalf ?

*Fel.* More perhaps than you imagine.

*Clara.* Tell me all at least, that I may at least know my debt, if unable to repay it.

*Fel.* Alas, I dare not say what is said in not saying.

*Clara.* Said, and not said ? I do not understand.

*Fel.* I, alas, too well !

*Clara.* Explain to me then, sir.

*Fel.* No, madam. If what I feel is so much on

SCENE III] BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER 483

my friends' account, it is still more for their sakes that I keep it unsaid.

*Clara.* Hark ! what noise is that ? Mari Nuño what is the matter ?

*Enter MARI NUÑO.*

*Mari.* Oh, madam, some one is getting over the garden wall ! Your father has heard the noise ; and is got up with his sword.

*Clara.* If he should find you !

*Fel.* He need not. This balcony—

*Clara.* No, no !

*Torribio (within).* Thieves ! Murder ! Help !  
(*He opens the balcony ; TORRIBIO falls forward on him, push'd in by JUAN with his sword drawn*).

*Torr.* Murder ! Murder !

*Juan (to FELIX).* Thou too here, |  
traitor ! *All at once.*

*Fel. (drawing his sword).* Who are these ?

(*Confusion, in which enter ALONSO with drawn sword, OTÁÑEZ, BRIGIDA, &c.*).

*Alon.* Two ! Torribio, to my side !

*Fel.* Wait ! wait ! Let me explain.

*Alon.* Don Felix !

*Fel.* Listen to me, all of you, I say ! I was sent for to prevent, not to do, mischief, by Donna Eugenia herself—

*Enter* EUGENIA.

*Eug.* By *me*, sir !

*Clara.* Hold, hold, Eugenia !

*Eug.* I will *not* hold when my name is in question without my— Sent for by me, sir !

*Fel.* Not by you, madam ; by Donna Eugenia, (*pointing to CLARA*) to prevent—

*Alon. and Eug.* Clara !

*Torr.* Ah, 'twas she put me to freeze in the balcony, too.

*Clara (to FELIX).* Sir, you come here to save another from peril. Leave me not in it.

*Fel.* I leave you, madam, who would lay down my life for you ! and all the rather if you are *not* Donna Eugenia.

*Alon.* None but her father or her husband must do that.

*Fel.* Then let me claim to do it as the latter, (*Kneels to CLARA.*)

*Alon.* But Clara ?

*Clara.* Sir, I am ready to obey my father—and my husband.

*Eug.* And I, sir. And to prove my duty, let me marry my cousin at once, and retire with him to the mountains.

*Torr.* Marry me ! No, indeed ! No Capacities, and ladders, and—what-d'ye-call-'ems—for me. I'll e'en go back as I came, with my ancestors safe in my saddle-bags, I will.

*Juan* (to ALONSO). Permit me, sir. I am Don Juan de Mendoza ; a name at least not unknown to you. I have loved your daughter long ; and might have had perchance favourable acceptance from her mother long ago, had not you yourself been abroad at the time. •

*Alon.* I now remember to have heard something of the kind. What say you, Eugenia ?

*Eug.* I am ready to obey my father—and my husband.

With which at last our comedy shall close,  
Asking indulgence both of friends and foes.

*Clara.* And ere we part our text for envoy give,—  
Beware of all smooth waters while you live !

---

This Comedy seems an Occasional Piece, to celebrate the

marriage of Philip IV. with Anna Maria of Austria, and the pageants that Calderon himself was summoned to devise and manage. This marriage was in 1649; when Calderon, as old as the century, was in his prime; and I think the airy lightness of the dialogue, the play of character, the easy intrigue, and the happily introduced wedding rhapsodies, make it one of the most agreeable of his comedies.

As I purposely reduced the swell of Isabel's speech in the last play, I must confess that the present version of these wedding pageants, though not unauthorized by the original, had perhaps better have been taken in a lighter tone to chime in with so much common dialogue. But they were done first, to see what could be made of them: and, as little dramatic interest is concerned, are left as they were; at least not the less like so much in Calderon, where love and loyalty are concerned; and to be excused by the reader as speeches *spouted* by boys on holiday occasions.

# Notes

## ADVERTISEMENT

1, 3<sup>9</sup>-9. It seems probable that FitzGerald very wisely preferred reading Calderón's plays themselves rather than the books that have been written on them : otherwise he would scarcely have made this statement. For the rest, his foot-notes show that he himself admired several of them. Thus (p. 106) he places *El Pintor de su Deshonra* above the more famous *Medico de su Honra* ; and (p. 486) extols *Guardate del Agua Mansa*, which many competent critics, both before 1853 and since, regard as the finest among the poet's comedias pure and simple : indeed, Menéndez y Pelayo, the most competent of them all, selects this play to represent the lighter comedies in his *Teatro Selecto* of Calderón. The second of our plays is scarcely inferior as an example of this *genre* ; while the third justly ranks among the greatest of the tragedies. *Luis Perez*, alone, perhaps deserves the title of melodrama ; and though some perfervid German admirers of our poet insist, not only on drawing parallels between this piece and the *Räuber* (for which there is some justification), but on extolling it at the expense of Schiller's play (for which there is no justification whatever)—all the best critics agree in condemning it, on the score both of its faulty construction and of its bombastic dialogue. It almost certainly belongs to the period of the poet's youth. There is nothing to show on what principle FitzGerald proceeded in the

selection of the plays. They are all contained in vol. iv. of Keil's edition (1830); and it seems probable that he used this text, not only from the evidence of certain readings, but because he recommends it to Borrow (in a letter dated August 3, 1853).

1, 13-16 and 2, 1-14. Very similar views have been expressed by other Calderonians. See for example, Rapp, at the end of his Introduction to Braunfels' fine translation of some of Calderón's plays (in vol. vi. of their *Spanisches Theater* Leipzig, s. d.).

### EL PINTOR DE SU DESHONRA

No attempt has been made to fix the date of this play. I have often thought that some of the incidents may have been inspired by an episode in the life of the painter Jusepe de Ribera (Spagnoletto), in which case the piece must have been written after 1648. The event in question has been discredited by some of the artist's biographers; but, whether it actually occurred or not, there certainly were many rumours of the story current, some of which must have reached our poet from Naples, especially after Velázquez had visited Ribera there. Sir William Stirling-Maxwell relates the incident as follows: "The Neapolitans, who hated Ribera for his country and for his arrogance, have a tradition which brings his story to a close with somewhat of poetical justice [see Dominici, *Vite dei Pittori, etc., Napolitani*, 1840-1846, iii. pp. 30, 31]. When Don Juan of Austria [not to be confounded with his name-sake, the hero of Lepanto] came to Naples in 1648, they say that the Valencian entertained him at an ostentatious musical party, and that he became enamoured of Maria Rosa, the painter's eldest daughter, who was remarkable for her beauty and grace. Dancing with her at balls, and visiting her under pretence of admiring her father's pictures, the Prince sighed and the maiden yielded; he carried her to Sicily, and when his passion was cloyed, he placed her in a convent at Palermo. . . . This

story is treated as a mere fable by Cean Bermudez [*Dicc. Hist. de los mas ilustres Profesores de las Bellas Artes en España*, Madrid, 1800], who, departing from his usual candour, is silent as to the misdeeds of his countryman" (*Annals of the Artists of Spain*, London, 1848, pp. 748, 749). I quote a further passage from Maxwell (pp. 752, 753) to show that the tradition was well established: "The nuns of Sta. Isabel hung over their high altar one of his Virgins of the Conception, in which they caused Claudio Coello to re-paint the head, because they had heard the scandal about Don Juan of Austria, and believed their Immaculate Lady to be a portrait of the peccant Maria Rosa." Mr. W. M. Rossetti says in the *Encycl. Brit.* (ed. 9, s.v. Ribera) that the painter's "daughter, so far from being disgraced by an abduction, married a Spanish nobleman, who became a minister of the viceroy"; but this was a younger daughter, Annicea, the wife of an official in the War Office named Don Tommaso Manzano. Allowing that there is some truth in the theory, it goes without saying that Calderón did not dramatise the story as he found it: Don Juan was a natural son of King Philip IV (by an actress named "Calderona") and a great favourite of his. In fact, the points of contact, when reduced to their narrowest limits, are very slight. In the story, whether it be true or false, a Governor of Naples seduces the daughter of a Spanish painter; in the play the son of a Governor of Naples compromises the wife of a Spanish painter, while a Prince is implicated, too, though he is depicted as, on the whole, a man of magnanimous character. In both cases the abduction takes place at a festivity. Ribera painted mythological subjects, but I cannot find that his works include a *Hercules* such as is described in our play (see pp. 92 and 93). All I claim for my theory is that Calderón may have borrowed some motives from the tradition relating to Don Juan; though it may, of course, have been his intention at the same time to make the play serve as a covert rebuke to the young Prince.

14, 20, 199. FitzGerald has a note (p. 139) on all that a coach implies to the average Spaniard. See, too, p. 427.



50, 6 and 51, 9, 10. Calderón often seems to feel that the poetical imagery, to which he was almost committed by the taste of his time and country, and in which he was surpassed by no writer (this to be understood not altogether in a laudatory sense)—was, if carried to excess, out of place on the stage. Another instance of such self-criticism will be found on p. 194.

89 and 90. Similarly, Don Juan's speech may be taken as an indictment against those unspeakably cruel laws involved by the "point of honour," which played such a part in Spain—especially, though by no means exclusively, on the stage.

106 (note). This Treatise on Painting was not printed till the year 1781, in vol. iv. of Francisco Mariano Nifo's *Cajón de sastre, literato*, etc.

### NADIE FIE SU SECRETO

Though the incidents of this play are, so far as I know, not historical, the hero, Prince Alexander Farnese, of Parma, is, of course, a well known figure in history. He was the nephew of King Philip II, and played a conspicuous part in the war of the Netherlands (1578-1584). English readers should be familiar with his exploits from Part vi. of Motley's *Rise of the Dutch Republic*. The second chapter contains an account of the terrible second Siege of Maestricht (March 12 to June 29, 1579), which reads like a nightmare, but of which the Spaniards were always particularly proud (see, in our volume, pp. 183 and 458).

114 and 115. *Ombre* is "usually played by three persons, though sometimes by two and five. The game is played with 40 cards (the eights, nines and tens, having been removed), and each player receives nine cards, three by three" (Chambers' *Encycl.*).—*Basto*=the ace of clubs; *malilla*=the deuce of spades or clubs, or the seven of hearts or diamonds; *espadilla*=the ace of spades.—The Belinda of the foot-note is, of course, the

heroine of the *Rape of the Lock*, the third canto of which contains a brilliant account of a game at Ombre.

142 (note). It may not be superfluous to state that the *Desdicha de la Voz* is a play by Calderón himself.

184 (note). It would lead me too far to discuss all the plays with which the present one has been connected. Schack mentions Lope's *Yo me entiendo*, and this, again, is akin to the same writer's *La Quinta de Florencia*. All seem to go back to a novel of Bandello's (ii. 15). Students of the English Drama will find matter of interest in Köppel's admirable *Quellenstudien zu den Dramen Ben Jonson's, John Marston's, und Beaumont und Fletcher's*, 1895 (pp. 111-114). This scholar assigns *The Maids in the Mill* and *The Loyal Subject* to the same dramatic family.

### LUIS PEREZ EL GALLEGO

This is the correct title of the play, which was altered by FitzGerald (see note on p. 254). It was first printed in 1652 (in vol. i. of the *Comedias Escogidas* by various authors). At the end of the piece Calderón speaks of it as the First Part; but a second is not known to exist.

Though I do not agree with those critics who draw comparisons between our play and the *Räuber* (any more than I can see such striking points of resemblance between *Las Tres Justicias en una* and *King Lear* as are held to exist by the same school of Calderón worshippers), yet no one will deny that Luis has many traits in common with Karl Moor. The period of the action must be somewhere about the year 1588, for (on p. 214) there is mention of the war against England; the *Captain General* in question being the Duke of Medina-Sidonia, who, on the death of the Marquis of Santa-Cruz (1588), was appointed to the command of the Armada.

220, 12. Here, again, Calderón seems to be poking fun at the prevailing fashions of the Spanish Drama.

## LAS TRES JUSTICIAS EN UNA

This play was first printed in 1660, in vol. xiii. of the *Comedias Escogidas*. It is historical in so far as one of the characters is a King of Aragon, called Peter. The original does not specify which Peter is meant, but FitzGerald is wrong in assuming that it is Pedro IV (so in the *Dramatis Personæ*, and on p. 312, 10). On p. 289 (last line but two) he follows Keil in a misprint, taken over from the first Spanish edition, by reading *Norandino*. This should obviously be *Conradino* (as Hartzenbusch has it)—a reading which makes it clear that the Pedro of this play is the *Third* of that name. Students of medieval history and of Dante are familiar with the historical facts and personages in question: with Charles of Anjou, who “came to Italy, and, for amends, made a victim of Conradin” (*Purg.* xx. 66, 67); and with our Peter of Aragon and his former enemy, this same Charles, singing together in Purgatory, in the Valley of the Negligent Rulers—“He who seems so stout of limb, and accords his singing with him of the virile nose, was begirt with the cord of every worth!” (*Purg.* vii. 112–114). Others will need to be told that Conradin, the son of Conrad IV, was, in 1254, left heir to the Empire. As he was but three years old, his uncle Manfred usurped the crown, and held it till his death at the battle of Benevento (1265), where the Ghibelline force was routed by the adherents of the Guelfs, under Charles of Anjou. Young Conradin was, thereupon, urged to try his fortune against the aggressive Charles; but he, too, suffered defeat—at Tagliacozzo in 1268—and was beheaded two months later by Charles’ orders. Pedro’s connection with Charles and with young Conradin is explained in this way: When Charles was driven from the throne of Naples and Sicily after the terrible outbreak known as the “*Sicilian Vespers*” (1282), he was succeeded by Peter, whose claim to the crown of Sicily was based on his marriage with Constance, the daughter of Manfred,

King of Sicily ; and, as we have seen, Conradin was Manfred's nephew.

It may be noted in this place that the Spanish dramatists were very fond of changing the scene of their action from Spain to Italy, especially to the kingdom of Naples. Readers of the present volume will see that Calderón was specially addicted to this practice—a practice that distinctly adds to the interest of the pieces in question, for it enabled the writers to introduce touches of local colour and to provide a change of atmosphere. Spain's connection with the "Two Sicilies" dates from the events I have just briefly sketched ; culminated in the year 1504, when Gonsalvo de Cordova expelled the French from Naples, thus securing that kingdom for the crown of Aragon alone ; and was ended by Garibaldi in 1860—and rightly ended : for the Spanish rule had been of the most tyrannous nature.

286 (*note*). The present generation is not so well acquainted with this play by Mrs. Centlivre, which was produced at Drury Lane in 1714, and selected by Garrick for his last appearance at that theatre (June 10, 1776) ; while Charles Kemble took the part of Felix for the last time at Covent Garden on April 1, 1840. The complete title of the piece is *The Wonder : a Woman Keeps a Secret*. Modern reprints are in Lacy's Acting Edition of Plays (vol. 25), and in Dick's Standard Plays (No. 27). There can be no doubt that the scenes between Lissardo and the two girls Flora and Inis are inspired by some Spanish source, though not necessarily by our play, remarkable as are the points of resemblance between the two.

309 (*note*). I have taken the liberty of bringing this quotation from Chaucer up to date, by printing it from Prof. Skeat's edition (1894).

310. The note on this page had best be skipped, as it only serves to confuse the reader. Schmidt shows (pp. 237, 238) how Calderón has, in various plays, amalgamated three historical Pedros into one legendary, ideal figure.

## EL ALCALDE DE ZALAMEA

This play was first printed at Alcalá in 1651, as *El Garrote mas bien dado*. The title under which it has become universally known had been previously adopted by Lope de Vega for a drama that deals with the same incident, and was the direct source of Calderón's masterpiece. Since FitzGerald wrote his note on pp. 405, 406 this play of Lope's has been carefully edited by Max Krenkel, in his monumental edition of our drama (Leipzig, 1887).

The English student cannot do better than study Calderón's *Alcalde* in Mr. MacColl's volume, to which I referred in the Preface. There he will find a careful and impartial comparison between Lope's and Calderón's treatment of the theme. I quote the following general remarks: "The plot is certainly not one that Calderón would have chosen for himself. By nature he was little of a realist, and he would in all probability never have thought of making a *villano* and his daughter the leading characters of a tragedy; but finding the theme handled by Lope, he saw its capabilities with the intuition of a great poet, and he has turned a clever, eminently matter-of-fact piece, in which Lope probably deviated very slightly from the incidents as they actually occurred, into one of the most touching and poetical dramas ever written. Any one inclined to adopt the opinion now fashionable, that Lope is a greater dramatist than Calderón, will do well, before coming to a definite conclusion, to compare their treatment of the same subject."

It is interesting to note that only two copies of the early edition of Lope's play are known to exist, both of them in England. The one, belonging to the Library of Holland House, has been (temporarily, let us hope) mislaid; the other, formerly in the possession of Chorley, is now in the British Museum, and served as the basis of Krenkel's edition.

Another fact of far greater interest is that not only

Cervantes took part in the expedition of which this play records an incident (see note on pp. 340, 341), but that Lope de Vega, too, went through the campaign, and may therefore be assumed to have heard an account of the episode from the lips of an eye-witness. Both the great writers were in the *Tercio de Flandes*—the famous legion commanded by Figueroa.

The campaign in question was undertaken by Philip II in 1580, on the death of Don Sebastian, King of Portugal, against Don Antonio, one of the claimants of the crown; his object being, of course, to unite Portugal with Spain under one sceptre; and in this object he was ultimately successful. Philip's mercenary army was largely composed of the scum, not of Spain alone, but of Germany and Italy as well. It is not surprising, therefore, that incidents such as the one immortalised in our play were of common occurrence. José Pellicer y Tovar, a Spanish Pepys of the first half of the 17th century, whose *Avisos históricos* (published by a Valladores y Sotomayor in the *Semanario erudito*, xxxi and xxxii), were largely drawn on by Hartzenbusch for his Calderón notes, mentions several of them; and Krenkel adds a number of interesting data to the list. It is not necessary to repeat them here. •

Till Krenkel's book appeared, the following theories were held with regard to the historical facts and Calderón's treatment of them:—Before placing the main body of his forces under Alva's command, Philip marched westward to review the force at Badajoz. While on his way thither, on passing through the little town of Zalamea, some fifty leagues west of Madrid, he took part in the incident described. The only inaccuracy of which Calderón was held guilty was that he credited the *Tercio de Flandes* with a share in the opening movements of the campaign; whereas, in point of fact, they did not reach the scene of action till towards the close of the operations.

Krenkel, after an exhaustive survey and much original research, concludes that the incident did not take place in

August (see pp. 368 and 384 of the present volume), by which time the Spanish army had long crossed the Spanish frontier, but at the earliest towards the end of 1580, or the beginning of 1581; that the Captain Alvaro de Ataide was not under the supreme command of Figueroa (who was still far from Spain); and that King Philip had no part in the whole affair.

### GUARDATE DEL AGUA MANSA

This play must have been written very shortly after 1649 (see FitzGerald's note on pp. 485, 486); but it was not printed till 1657 (*Comedias nuevas*, viii). We have Tassis' testimony for the fact that Calderón had charge of the arrangements for the procession in question: *El [año de] 49, hallándose en Alba con el Excelentísimo señor Duque [de Olivares], le mandó S. M. por su real decreto volver á la corte á trazar y describir aquellos célebres arcos triunfales para la feliz entrada de su augusta esclarecida esposa, Doña María Ana de Austria, nuestra señora, gloriosísima reina madre.* Most of Calderón's biographers imply that the poet was too modest to take all the credit for this magnificent State Entry, and that, although he wrote out the official account, he let a certain Lorenzo Ramirez de Prado put his name to the book. Tassis refers to it as *el libro de la entrada de la augusta Reina madre, nuestra señora*, and mentions it among our poet's works. In Antonio I find an entry under de Prado's name, which is evidently the book in question—*Noticia del Recibimiento y entrada de la Reyna N. Señora Doña Maria Anna de Austria en la Corte de Madrid.* But I feel sure that Calderón never wrote a line of it; and that, if he was really told to *describir* the affair, he only did it once—namely, in our play. The poor little Queen, about whom they made all this fuss, was only fourteen years of age at the time (p. 421, 11). She is the heroine of the anecdote retailed in so many school-books, the point of which is that "the Queen of Spain has no legs." The bridegroom, Philip IV, was

the girl's uncle (p. 443, 14), and her senior by thirty-one years. Her mother, Maria, was Philip IV's sister and the wife of the Emperor Ferdinand III: hence she is called "a debt" (p. 421, 1), or pledge (*prenda*), which, having been temporarily lost to Spain, was now being redeemed in the person of her daughter. The child was accompanied as far as Trent by her brother Ferdinand, from Trent to Milan by the Duke of Turin (this stage being omitted in FitzGerald's version), and from Milan to Denia (on the E. coast of Spain, between Valencia and Alicante) by the Admiral Doria--one of the lesser scions of that house (pp. 421-423). Schmidt sees in Calderón's allusion to Ferdinand IV (p. 421, 21-25 and p. 422, 1-2) a reflection of the earnest desire of the Spanish Court for a marriage between this young man and Maria Theresa, Philip IV's daughter. The scheme was, however, frustrated, first by the Spaniards' fear of France, and then by Ferdinand's premature death.

Calderón's play *Mejor está que estaba* forms a parallel with the present piece in so far as its scene was laid in Vienna for the obvious purpose of celebrating the festive entry of the Infanta Maria into Austria.

456, 1. *fort or apple*. Eugenia is referring to Clara's phrase about the apple and the fortress (last two lines of p. 454).

475 (note). FitzGerald's ingenious, but somewhat unsavoury, etymology is, of course, wrong. The Oxford Dictionary very properly goes back to "F. *verdugale*, *vertugalle*, corruption of Sp. *verdugado*, a farthingale, from *verdugo*, rod, stick (so called because distended by cane hoops or rods inserted underneath)." I do not feel at all sure that there may not be, at the same time, some element of popular etymology in the word—if not in the English, at least in the Spanish form. Bearing in mind the Spanish synonym, *guardainfanta*, it is difficult to resist the feeling that *virtud* and *guardar* may be connected with the word *verdugada*.



BUTLER & TANNER,  
THE SELWOOD PRINTING WORKS,  
FROME, AND LONDON.

# The King's Classics

UNDER THE GENERAL

EDITORSHIP OF

ISRAEL GOLLANCZ

The popular section of "The King's Library" called "The King's Classics," is differentiated in many important respects from the pocket libraries now in vogue ; and while inexpensive, and of small form, will be found more suitable for the library.

The text is in every case reliable, carefully edited, unabridged, clearly printed in good bold type, and not upon too thin a paper.

## PRESS OPINIONS ON THE FIRST VOLUME OF THE KING'S CLASSICS

"A most appropriate work this with which to inaugurate a new series very evidently designed to appeal not only to all book-lovers of taste, but even to those who have necessarily to keep their expenditure on books within narrow bounds. Technically, the book is 'printed on antique laid paper, 16mo, quarter bound, white, with antique grey sides'; to the eye it is reminiscent of the Kelmscott publications—and for the price of one shilling ! Really, it seems to establish a 'record' in the production of good literature in tasteful fashion at a low price. Readers who are afraid that the white and grey covers may too readily soil, can have the book bound in red cloth. Mr. Gollancz has a proper sense of the fitting duties of an editor. He does not preface the 'Philobiblon' with an essay of his own, in the old editing style, but he furnishes helpful bibliographical knowledge ; tells his readers who Richard de Bury was, hints at

## THE KING'S CLASSICS—Press Opinions (continued)

the disputed authorship of the work, and records the various issues, both of the original Latin and of the English translations. Every book-lover into whose hands this book comes will look out eagerly for the further promised volumes of what bids fair to be one of the most valuable of our many reprint series."—*The Observer*.

"Mr. Moring's edition is admirably printed, and costs only one shilling."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"The first volume of a new series of reprints of English Classics. 'Philobiblon,' of which it is a translation, was first printed in 1473 at Cologne, the work of Richard de Bury (1281–1345), Bishop of Durham, High Chancellor to Edward III, diplomatist and book collector. The first carefully collated text in modern times was edited, with a translation—the one now reprinted—by Mr. E. C. Thomas, who did not long survive his work. The edition was a very limited one and soon exhausted. The general editor of the series, Mr. Israel Gollancz, has added a few notes. It is an elegant little quarto, well printed on good paper."—*The Times*.

"A perfect marvel of a shilling's worth."—*Church Times*.

---

## BOOKS PUBLISHED AND IN THE PRESS

### The Love of Books

Being the "Philobiblon" of Richard de Bury. A seal of Richard de Bury, as Bishop of Durham, is reproduced in photogravure as a frontispiece. 1s. net in boards or red cloth. Also bound grey cloth, white back, gilt top, 2s. 6d. net. Or with real vellum back, 3s. 6d. net.

*Second Edition, with Index, now ready.*

# The Love Letters of Dorothy Osborne to Sir William Temple

Newly edited from the original MS., with notes and a copious index, by ISRAEL GOLLANCZ. Grey boards, with white back and gilt top, or red cloth and gilt top, 2s. 6d. net.

"The really precious part of hi-tory."—*Macaulay*.

This edition is the first complete and accurate rendering of the original letters. The letters, written by one of the ablest of English women in that stirring age, will be found fascinating both on account of their literary charm and of the light they throw upon contemporary characters and events. [Ready.

*Companion Volume to the "Love Letters of Dorothy Osborne"*

# The Life of Margaret Godolphin

• By JOHN EVELYN. Based on the *editio princeps* of Samuel Wilberforce, Bishop of Oxford. Portrait Frontispiece, engraved on copper. Gilt top, antique grey boards, or red cloth. 2s. 6d. net.

"Margaret Godolphin was another of the great and good women of the later seventeenth century—those evil days through which she was enabled to live in the brightness of a godly purity, and to die in peace."—*Preface*. [In the press.

# Six Dramas of Calderon

Translated by EDWARD FITZGERALD. Edited with Introduction and Notes by H. OELSNER, M.A., Ph.D. 3s. 6d. net. [Ready.

# The Life of Sir Thomas More

By WILLIAM ROPER. Together with letters to and from his famous daughter, Margaret Roper. With engraved portrait, 1s. 6d. net. [*In the press.*]

# The Eikon Basilike ; or, The King's Book

With engraved portrait. Edited by EDWARD ALMACK, F.S.A. This edition will be the first inexpensive one in which the original spelling of the first edition is preserved. 2s. net. [*In the press.*]

# The Chronicle of Jacelin of Brakelond : a Picture of Monastic Life in the Days of Abbot Samson.

Newly edited, with Introduction, notes, table of dates relating to the Abbey of Edmundsbury, and a copious index, by SIR ERNEST CLARKE, F.S.A. Reproduction of seal of Abbot Samson (A.D. 1200), as frontispiece. 2s. net. [*In the press.*]

# Convent Life ; or, The Nun's Rule

Translated from the Old English original of the thirteenth century. Edited by the General Editor of the series. [*In the press.*]

ALEXANDER MORING

THE DE LA MORE PRESS

298 REGENT STREET LONDON W















